

## **Lincoln University Digital Thesis**

### **Copyright Statement**

The digital copy of this thesis is protected by the Copyright Act 1994 (New Zealand).

This thesis may be consulted by you, provided you comply with the provisions of the Act and the following conditions of use:

- you will use the copy only for the purposes of research or private study
- you will recognise the author's right to be identified as the author of the thesis and due acknowledgement will be made to the author where appropriate
- you will obtain the author's permission before publishing any material from the thesis.

Pre-Publication of Parts of this thesis.

Chapter 3 – a manuscript from this section has been accepted for publication as follows:

Uchida, Y., Clough, T.J., Kelliher, F.M., Sherlock, R.R. 2010. Soil microbial respiration responses to changing temperature and substrate availability in fertile grassland. *Australian Journal of Soil Research* Vol. 48 No. 5 Pages 395-403.

Chapter 4 – a manuscript from this section has been accepted for publication as follows:

Uchida, Y., Hunt, J.E., Barbour, M.M., Clough, T.J., Kelliher, F.M., Sherlock, R.R. 2010. Soil properties and presence of plants affect the temperature sensitivity of carbon dioxide production by soils. *Plant and Soil* DOI: 10.1007/s11104-010-0533-9.

# **The Effects of Substrate, Temperature and Soil Fertility on Respiration and N<sub>2</sub>O Production in Pastoral Soils**

---

A thesis  
submitted in partial fulfilment  
of the requirements for the Degree of  
Doctor of Philosophy

at  
Lincoln University  
by  
Yoshitaka Uchida

---

Lincoln University  
2010

Abstract of a thesis submitted in partial fulfilment of the  
requirements for the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy.

## **The Effects of Substrate, Temperature and Soil Fertility on Respiration and N<sub>2</sub>O Production in Pastoral Soils**

by

Yoshitaka Uchida

Soil respiration ( $R_S$ ) and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions from pastoral ecosystems are responsible for a substantial portion of global greenhouse gas budget. The soil processes responsible for  $R_S$  and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions are sensitive to soil temperature ( $T_S$ ). However, there are many points which are uncertain in this temperature sensitivity of soil processes, because of the complexity of the mechanisms controlling the processes. The temperature sensitivity is defined as a proportional increase of the rate of soil process or activity per a unit change of soil temperature. An important factor controlling the temperature response of the soil processes is substrate availability. Hence the objectives of this research were (1) to quantify the interaction between temperature and soil substrate availability on soil microbial activity in the absence of plant substrate inputs, (2) to determine the temperature sensitivity of respiration sourced from root-derived C ( $R_{RD}$ ) and soil organic matter decomposition ( $R_{OM}$ ) in two pasture soils of contrasting nutrient status, and (3) to investigate the effects of a urine deposition events on  $R_S$  and N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes.

The first experiment measured the changes in soil microbial respiration ( $R_M$ ) without plants present at 3°, 9°, and 24°C. At 9° and 24°C,  $R_M$  was significantly reduced within 2 days while  $R_M$  remained constant for 14 days at 3°C. The decrease in  $R_M$  at higher  $T_S$  was caused by substrate depletion but the substrate depletion was not indicated by the soil's water soluble and hot-water soluble C. The first experiment showed that at higher  $T_S$ , soil microbes could access soil C that was not accessible to soil microbes at lower  $T_S$ . The second experiment focused on the temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$  with plants present in two soils with contrasting nutrient status (fertility). The components of  $R_S$ ;  $R_{RD}$  and  $R_{OM}$  were separately measured using a natural <sup>13</sup>C abundance technique. The results suggested the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$  was significantly reduced in the low fertility soil only when plants were actively

growing, while the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{RD}$  was unaffected by soil nutrient status. Finally the third experiment investigated the changes in soil  $N_2O$  emissions and  $R_S$  following a urine deposition event on a pasture soil at various  $T_S$  (11°, 19°, and 23°C) with or without plants present. Soil moisture was increased from 50% to 70% water-filled pore space at 21 days following the urine deposition event. Soil-N contributed to soil  $N_2O$  emissions only at the early phase of the experiment, especially at higher  $T_S$ , and the contribution was lesser when plants were present. The presence of plants increased  $N_2O$  flux particularly when soil moisture contents were high, and when  $T_S$  was > 19°C. Urine application primed soil C and increased the rate of  $R_S$ . The magnitude of urine-induced priming of soil C was relatively larger at lower  $T_S$ , and was larger when plants were absent based on the estimation from cumulative  $R_S$ . Based on the results obtained using a natural  $^{13}C$  abundance, when plants were present, urine application increased the contribution of  $R_{OM}$  to  $R_S$  particularly at 19°C.

This study indicates that the responses of soil  $N_2O$  fluxes and  $R_S$  to temperature changes are markedly affected by plant presence and soil nutrient status. Both urine addition and plant activity primed  $R_S$  but the magnitude of the priming effect was influenced by other factors (e.g.  $T_S$ ). To accurately predict the global warming feedback of belowground soil processes, the factors affecting the aboveground plant activity (e.g. soil nutrient status) have to be taken into account.

**Keywords:** Carbon, pasture, water soluble C, soil temperature, soil respiration, atmospheric  $CO_2$ , organic matter,  $^{13}C$ , root exudate C.

## **Acknowledgements**

I would like to sincerely thank my supervisors, Professor Francis Kelliher and Associate Professor Timothy Clough, for their great supervision. I would like to thank Dr John Hunt, Dr Margaret Barbour and Associate Professor Rob Sherlock for their advice and help for this work.

Thanks to all the technicians in the department.

Many thanks to Lincoln University for providing me with a stipend and to Manaaki Whenua Landcare Research for funding this project from their capability fund. This study was funded by and was performed in Manaaki Whenua Landcare Research, Lincoln, New Zealand. I thank Graeme Rogers, J. Richard Sedcole and Takayoshi Ikeda for their technical support and advice on the statistical analysis.

To Aya, Tom, Yukiko, Rika, Risa, Jolon, Yumi, Tomohiro, Connie, Shizuka, and everyone else who encouraged me all the time, thanks all of you.

I thank my God.

Finally I wish to thank my parents and my sister for their love and support.

# Table of Contents

<b>Abstract .....</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>Acknowledgements .....</b>	<b>3</b>
<b>Table of Contents.....</b>	<b>4</b>
<b>List of Tables.....</b>	<b>7</b>
<b>List of Figures .....</b>	<b>9</b>
<b>Chapter 1 Introduction .....</b>	<b>13</b>
1.1 Background	13
1.2 Research objectives	14
1.3 Thesis structure	14
<b>Chapter 2 Literature Review.....</b>	<b>16</b>
2.1 Introduction	16
2.2 Soil respiration in pastoral ecosystems	18
2.2.1 Carbon cycling in pastoral ecosystems	18
2.2.2 Soil respiration processes	19
2.2.2.1 Root respiration	19
2.2.2.2 Rhizosphere respiration and root-derived C respiration	20
2.2.2.3 Decomposition of soil organic matter and 'R <sub>OM</sub> '	21
2.2.2.4 Priming effect	21
2.2.3 Factors controlling soil respiration	22
2.2.3.1 Substrate quantity and availability	22
2.2.3.2 Temperature	23
2.2.3.3 Effects of substrate supply and availability on the temperature sensitivity of soil respiration	24
2.2.3.4 Soil fertility and microbial biomass	25
2.2.3.5 Urine effects on soil respiration and C substrate supply	26
2.2.4 Methods to investigate the factors controlling soil respiration in pasture soils	27
2.2.4.1 Natural <sup>13</sup> C abundance technique	28
2.3 Soil N <sub>2</sub> O emissions	29
2.3.1 The importance of soil N <sub>2</sub> O emissions	29
2.3.2 Processes of nitrous oxide production in pastoral soils	29
2.3.2.1 Nitrification	29
2.3.2.2 Denitrification	30
2.3.2.3 Coupled nitrification-denitrification	31
2.3.2.4 Chemodenitrification	31
2.3.2.5 Nitrifier-denitrification	31
2.3.3 Factors controlling soil N <sub>2</sub> O emissions	32
2.3.3.1 Soil pH	32
2.3.3.2 Substrate supply and availability	33
2.3.3.3 Temperature	33
2.3.3.4 Soil moisture	34
2.3.3.5 The interaction between soil moisture and temperature	34
2.3.3.6 Urine deposition	35
2.3.4 Methods to investigate the factors controlling soil N <sub>2</sub> O emissions in pasture soils	36
2.3.4.1 Nitrogen isotope technique	36
2.4 Global warming and the pastoral ecosystem	36

2.4.1	Changes in global mean atmospheric temperature	37
2.4.2	Potential effects of global warming on soil processes in pastoral ecosystems	38
2.4.2.1	Potential effects of global warming on soil respiration	38
2.4.2.2	Acceleration in carbon loss from soil and soil carbon cycle feedback	38
2.4.2.3	Potential effects of global warming on soil N <sub>2</sub> O emissions	40
2.5	Recommendation for research	40
<b>Chapter 3 Soil microbial respiration responses to changing temperature and substrate availability in fertile grassland .....</b>		<b>42</b>
3.1	Abstract	42
3.2	Introduction	43
3.3	Materials and Methods	45
3.3.1	Field measurements of soil respiration rates	45
3.3.2	Preparation of soil for laboratory experiments	46
3.3.3	Incubation procedure and soil respiration rate measurements	47
3.3.4	Effects of pre-incubating temperature on soil respiration rate	48
3.3.5	Water soluble C and hot water soluble C measurements	49
3.3.6	Statistical analysis	49
3.4	Results	49
3.4.1	Field measurements of soil respiration	49
3.4.2	Effects of temperature on soil CO <sub>2</sub> flux	52
3.4.3	The effect of temperature alteration on soil respiration rates	54
3.4.4	Effects of temperature on WSC and HWSC	55
3.5	Discussion	56
3.5.1	Responses of soil respiration to changing temperatures	56
3.5.2	WSC and HWC	57
3.5.3	The effect of pre-incubation treatments	58
3.6	Conclusions	59
<b>Chapter 4 Fertility and plants affect the temperature sensitivity of carbon dioxide production in soils.....</b>		<b>60</b>
4.1	Abstract	60
4.2	Introduction	61
4.3	Materials and methods	63
4.3.1	Soil	63
4.3.2	Preparation of pots	64
4.3.3	Total soil respiration measurements	65
4.3.4	Collection of respired CO <sub>2</sub> from various sources and $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ measurements	65
4.3.5	Calculation of $R_{\text{OM}}$ and $R_{\text{RD}}$ rates	66
4.3.6	Temperature sensitivity analysis	67
4.3.7	Photosynthetic rate measurements and herbage sample analysis	68
4.4	Results	69
4.4.1	Respiration sourced from soil C without plants	69
4.4.2	Soil respiration rates with plants present	69
4.4.3	Effects of soil fertility and temperature on $R_{\text{OM}}$ and $R_{\text{RD}}$	71
4.4.4	Carbon assimilation rates and $R_{\text{RD}}$	74
4.4.5	Herbage sample analysis	76
4.5	Discussion	77
4.5.1	Total soil respiration and $R_{\text{OM}}$ with and without plants present	77
4.5.2	Root-derived C utilisation and C assimilation rates	79
4.6	Conclusion	80
<b>Chapter 5 Effects of bovine urine, plants and temperature on nitrous oxide and carbon dioxide emissions from a low fertility soil .....</b>		<b>81</b>



5.1	Abstract	81
5.2	Introduction	82
5.3	Materials and Methods	84
5.3.1	Soil collection and treatment structure	84
5.3.2	Measurement of soil N <sub>2</sub> O fluxes and <sup>15</sup> N enrichment	86
5.3.3	Measurement of soil CO <sub>2</sub> fluxes and the calculation of the amount of soil-respired CO <sub>2</sub>	88
5.3.4	The δ <sup>13</sup> C values of soil-respired CO <sub>2</sub>	89
5.3.5	Isotopic analysis of plant and soil and calculation of <i>R</i> <sub>OM</sub> and <i>R</i> <sub>RDU</sub>	89
5.3.6	Photosynthesis rate measurements and herbage sample analysis	90
5.3.7	Statistical and data analysis	91
5.4	Results	93
5.4.1	Basic information for soil and urine	93
5.4.2	Soil N <sub>2</sub> O fluxes over time	93
5.4.3	Cumulative N <sub>2</sub> O-N	94
5.4.4	<sup>15</sup> N atom% of N <sub>2</sub> O-N and the ratio of N <sub>2</sub> O-N derived from urine-N	96
5.4.5	Nitrogen recovery as nitrous oxide	97
5.4.6	Nitrogen contents in soils and plant N uptake	97
5.4.7	Soil carbon dioxide fluxes over time	100
5.4.8	Cumulative CO <sub>2</sub> production from soil respiration and abiotic processes	104
5.4.9	The δ <sup>13</sup> C values of soil-respired C and the sources of soil respiration	106
5.4.10	Photosynthesis rates and plant growth	112
5.5	Discussion	115
5.5.1	Effects of temperature, soil moisture, ryegrass and urine on soil N <sub>2</sub> O flux	115
5.5.2	<sup>15</sup> N enrichment and recovery as N <sub>2</sub> O	118
5.5.3	Effects of temperature, soil moisture, ryegrass and urine on soil CO <sub>2</sub> flux	120
5.5.4	The δ <sup>13</sup> C values of soil CO <sub>2</sub> fluxes	125
5.6	Conclusion	127
<b>Chapter 6 Synthesis and recommendations for further research .....</b>		<b>128</b>
6.1	Overall summary and future work	128
6.1.1	Soil microbial respiration responses to changing temperature and substrate availability in fertile grassland	128
6.1.2	Fertility and plants affect the temperature sensitivity of carbon dioxide production in soils	129
6.1.3	Effects of bovine urine, plants and temperature on nitrous oxide and carbon dioxide emissions from a low fertility soil	131
6.2	General comments	133

## List of Tables

Table 3.1	The parameters describing the responses of soil respiration rate over time at different temperatures. The model used was $R_M = a + br^t$ and standard errors for each parameters are shown in the “s.e.” columns. For each parameter, different letters denote significant differences. ....	53
Table 4.1	Selected properties of the <i>LF</i> and <i>HF</i> soils. The soil test was performed by R J Hill Laboratories Limited, Hamilton, New Zealand. Total nutrient was measured using an EPA Aqua Regia digest method. Available N was measured using an anaerobically mineralizable N method. Water soluble C and hot-water soluble C were measured using a method described by Ghani et al. (2003) and are the mean $\pm$ SEM ( $n = 3$ ). The soils were collected in April 2009. ....	64
Table 4.2	The $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ abundances of soil-respired $\text{CO}_2$ ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{R_s}$ ), $\text{CO}_2$ sourced from $R_{RD}$ ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{RD}$ ), $\text{CO}_2$ sourced from $R_{OM}$ ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{OM}$ ), and calculated fractions of $R_{OM}$ ( $f_{OM}$ ) and $R_{RD}$ ( $f_{RD}$ ) in $R_s$ from the (a) <i>LF</i> and (b) <i>HF</i> soil, respectively. Errors of the $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ abundances represent SEM ( $n = 4$ : $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{R_s}$ and $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{RD}$ for <i>LF</i> , $n = 6$ : $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{R_s}$ and $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{RD}$ for <i>HF</i> , $n = 3$ : $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{OM}$ ). The propagated errors for the fractions ( $f_{OM}$ and $f_{RD}$ ) were calculated based on the errors of the $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ abundances using a method described by Phillips and Gregg (2001). ***, **, and ns denote the significant effect of treatment temperature with $p < 0.01$ , $p < 0.05$ , and $p \geq 0.05$ , respectively. ....	73
Table 4.3	Leaf and root biomass per pot measured immediately following the $R_s$ measurements and the estimated fractions of $\text{CO}_2$ respired via $R_{RD}$ per unit weight of net $\text{CO}_2$ fixed by photosynthesis ( $A$ ). The errors represent SEM ( $n = 4$ ). ....	75
Table 5.1	Cumulative $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ emissions ( $\mu\text{g N}_2\text{O-N kg}^{-1}$ ) for the moderate moisture phase (0 to 408 h), the high moisture phase (408 to 672 h), and the total cumulative $\text{N}_2\text{O-N}$ emission (0 to 672 h). The total cumulative $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ emission is also expressed as a percentage of the urine-N applied, an emission factor (EF). Errors are $\pm$ SEM ( $n = 3$ ). The values in brackets (high moisture phase) are the contribution of cumulative $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ fluxes in the high moisture phase to the total cumulative $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ emissions (%). ....	95
Table 5.2	Soil $\text{NH}_4^+$ -N and $\text{NO}_3^-$ -N concentrations ( $\mu\text{g N g}^{-1}$ soil) measured at 672 h following urine treatment. Errors bars are SEM ( $n = 3$ ). ....	98
Table 5.3	Leaf and root %N contents at the end of the experiment (672 h following the urine treatment) for the <i>ryegrass control</i> pots. Error bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ). ....	98
Table 5.4	Ryegrass leaf and root N contents, atom% $^{15}\text{N}$ enrichments and $^{15}\text{N}$ recoveries (%) for the <i>ryegrass + urine</i> pots. Errors are SEM ( $n = 3$ ). ....	99
Table 5.5	The estimated parameters and their standard errors for the time response model (eqn. 5.5) for $F_{\text{CO}_2}$ following urine treatment. The errors are the standard errors of the parameter estimation. ....	102
Table 5.6	(a) Total cumulative $\text{CO}_2$ flux ( $R_s$ plus urine derived abiotic $\text{CO}_2$ production) and (b) $\text{CO}_2$ production due to $R_s$ (cumulative $\text{CO}_2$ flux minus urine derived $\text{CO}_2$ flux) over the course of study (672 h). In the + <i>urine</i> treatments, the amount of $\text{CO}_2$ emitted from (a) total cumulative $\text{CO}_2$ flux was calculated first and then the amount of $\text{CO}_2$ emitted from urea hydrolysis ( $2.09 \text{ g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ soil}$ ) was deducted to obtain (b) the flux due to $R_s$ . The urine application effect (b – c) is shown in (d). The relative increase in $R_s$ due to a urine application when compared to (c) cumulative $\text{CO}_2$ flux in the <i>control</i> treatments i.e. the urine induced priming is shown as a percentage (e). The errors indicate SEM ( $n = 3$ ). ....	105

Table 5.7 The $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ signatures obtained from the end members. The values for $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}$ and $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}$ originated with $\text{CO}_2$ produced from plant roots and the <i>soil control</i> pots, respectively. The errors are SEM ( $n = 3$ ).....	106
Table 5.8 The magnitude of priming effect on $R_{\text{OM}}$ induced by (d) ryegrass presence and (e) ryegrass + urine presence at 360 and 552 h following urine application calculated based on $R_{\text{OM}}$ in the (a) <i>soil control</i> , (b) <i>ryegrass control</i> , and (c) <i>ryegrass + urine</i> treatments. The $R_{\text{OM}}$ rates were calculated from the fraction of $R_{\text{OM}}$ contributing to $R_{\text{S}}$ ( $f_{\text{OM}}$ , Fig. 5.7), and the measured $R_{\text{S}}$ rates (Fig. 5.4). The error bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ). ....	110
Table 5.9 Leaf and root dry weight biomass ( $\text{g pot}^{-1}$ ) at the end of the experiment (672 h following the urine treatment). The data is the average of three replicates and the error bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ). ....	113
Table 5.10 The estimated fractions of urine and root-derived C utilisation ( $R_{\text{RDU}}$ ) per unit weight of net $\text{CO}_2$ fixed by photosynthesis at 552 h following urine application. The errors represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ). ....	114
Table 5.11 Natural logarithm of the parameter $r$ , determined from eqn. 5.5 (Table 5.5). For each ryegrass treatment ( <i>ryegrass + urine</i> and <i>soil + urine</i> ), dissimilar letters represent significant differences between treatment temperatures. ....	124

## List of Figures

Figure 2.1 Outline of the nitrification pathways (after Wrage et al., 2001). .....	30
Figure 2.2 Outline of the denitrification pathway (after Hoshstein and Tomlinson, 1988). ..	31
Figure 2.3. The pathways for coupled nitrification-denitrification and nitrifier denitrification. The overlapping boxes symbolize the possibility of a coupling between nitrification and denitrification. In the proposed pathway of nitrifier- denitrification, $\text{NO}_2^-$ is reduced and $\text{NO}_3^-$ is not formed (after Wrage et al., 2001). .....	32
Figure 2.4 The modelled response of the emission factor (EF) from fertilizer to soil temperature and WFPS (after Flechard et al., 2007). .....	35
Figure 2.5 Observed changes in global average surface temperature based on the global average surface temperature in 1990. The shaded areas are the uncertainty intervals estimated from a comprehensive analysis of known uncertainties (after IPCC, 2007b). .....	37
Figure 2.6 Direct and indirect effects of climate change on soil microbial communities and routes of feedback to global warming through soil respiration ( $R_s$ ) (After Bardgett et al. 2008). .....	39
Figure 3.1 (a) Hourly average soil temperature (10 cm depth) frequency distributions for years 2006 - 2008 at Lincoln, New Zealand, beneath mown grass. The arrows are the three treatment temperatures in the laboratory study. (b) Frequency distribution of daily temperature range during year 2007 calculated using the hourly measurements. These data were obtained from New Zealand's National Climate Database (cliflo.niwa.co.nz). .....	47
Figure 3.2 Soil respiration rate ( $R_s$ , $\mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ ) and continuously measured soil temperature (1 cm depth) during a fine day, 3 <sup>rd</sup> April 2009, at Lincoln, New Zealand. Diel courses of the soil temperature (solid line, $^{\circ}\text{C}$ ) and $R_s$ (●) over time are shown in (a) and the curve in (b) was fitted to the data by regression, as described in the text. The Lloyd and Taylor model was fitted according to $R_{10}$ , $R_s$ at $10^{\circ}\text{C}$ , and accounted for 92% of the variance. ....	51
Figure 3.3 Soil microbial respiration rates ( $R_M$ ) for samples incubated at three temperatures. Error bars are SEM. The curves were fitted to the data by regression using a model of the form $R_M(t) = a + br^t$ . An asymptote was determined by parameter $a$ , $b$ was a scaling factor, and $t$ was time (h) elapsed during the incubation. The values for parameters $a$ , $b$ , and $r$ are shown in Table 3.1. ....	52
Figure 3.4 The responses of soil microbial respiration to soil temperature (symbols) and the Lloyd and Taylor model (solid line). Error bars are SEM ( $n = 8$ ). The Lloyd and Taylor model was fitted to the soil microbial respiration rate at $3^{\circ}\text{C}$ , 24 h into the incubation. The parameter $R_{10}$ (respiration rate at $10^{\circ}\text{C}$ ) is noted on the figure using different units, $\mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$ and $\mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ . The latter units included a bulk density of $980 \text{ kg m}^{-3}$ and depth of 0.05 m. ....	53
Figure 3.5 The effects of pre-incubation temperature and period on soil microbial respiration ( $R_M$ ) at $24^{\circ}\text{C}$ . The bars at 96 h are $R_M$ after a 24 h incubation at $24^{\circ}\text{C}$ for samples that were pre-incubated at $3^{\circ}$ (black bar) and $9^{\circ}\text{C}$ (silver bar) for 72 h. The bars at 360 h are $R_M$ after a 24 h incubation at $24^{\circ}\text{C}$ for samples that were pre-incubated at $3^{\circ}$ (black bar) and $9^{\circ}\text{C}$ (silver bar) for 336 h. Error bars are SEM ( $n = 4$ ). The curves shown in Fig. 3.3 portray $R_M$ over time for samples that were continuously incubated at $24^{\circ}$ , $9^{\circ}$ , or $3^{\circ}\text{C}$ . .....	54
Figure 3.6 Water soluble C content (a) and hot-water soluble C content (b) of soil samples incubated at $3^{\circ}$ , $9^{\circ}$ , and $24^{\circ}\text{C}$ . The error bars were SEM ( $n = 3$ ). ....	55

Figure 4.1	(a) $R_{OM}$ without plants at different soil temperatures in the <i>LF</i> soil (○) and <i>HF</i> soil (●) without plants, and (b) $R_S$ with plants present expressed as on a unit soil basis, or (c) expressed on a unit plant basis. Dashed and solid lines represent the best Lloyd and Taylor (1994) model fitted to $R_{OM}$ or $R_S$ , respectively. The $E_0$ , $R_{10}$ , and $r^2$ values are next to the corresponding curves, with the SE. Error bars are SEM ( $n = 3, 4$ , and $6$ for soils without plants, the <i>LF</i> soil with plants, and the <i>HF</i> soil with plants, respectively). Note different y axis scales. Data in Fig. 4.1(c) was used to separate $R_S$ into $R_{OM}$ and $R_{RD}$ and the results are shown in Fig. 4.2a and b. ....	70
Figure 4.2	$R_{OM}$ and $R_{RD}$ and their contributions to $R_S$ in the <i>LF</i> soil (a and c) and <i>HF</i> soil (b and d). Solid and dashed line in (a) and (b) represent the best Lloyd and Taylor (1994) model fitted to $R_{OM}$ and $R_{RD}$ , respectively. Parameters ( $E_0$ and $R_{10}$ ) for the fitted Lloyd and Taylor model and $r^2$ values are next to the corresponding curves along with the SE. Error bars represent SEM ( $n = 4$ and $6$ for the <i>LF</i> soil and the <i>HF</i> soil, respectively). Error bars in (c) and (d) represent propagated SEM for the fraction of $R_{OM}$ in $R_S$ calculated according to Phillips and Gregg (2003) (eqn. 4.3). ....	72
Figure 4.3	Temperature response of the carbon assimilation rates of ryegrass (○, <i>LF</i> soil) and paspalum (●, <i>HF</i> soil). Error bars represent SEM ( $n = 4$ ). ....	74
Figure 4.4	Total N contents of leaf (a) and root (b) biomass of ryegrass (○, <i>LF</i> soil) and paspalum (●, <i>HF</i> soil) grown at four temperatures. Error bars are SEM ( $n = 4$ and $6$ for the <i>LF</i> soil and the <i>HF</i> soil, respectively). ....	76
Figure 5.1	The effect of urine and ryegrass on soil $N_2O$ fluxes over time (h) at (a) $11^\circ C$ , (b) $19^\circ C$ and (c) $23^\circ C$ . The $N_2O$ fluxes were measured twice before cow urine application at 0 h. Error bars are the SEM ( $n = 3$ ). The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase in the soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application). ....	93
Figure 5.2	Atom% $^{15}N$ of $N_2O$ -N fluxes following urine application for (a) $11^\circ$ , (b) $19^\circ$ and (c) $23^\circ C$ with (○) and without (●) plants over time (h). The errors bars are SEM ( $n = 3$ ). The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase in soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application). ....	96
Figure 5.3	Cumulative recovery of $^{15}N$ applied as $N_2O$ -N over time (h). Error bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ). The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase in the soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application). ....	97
Figure 5.4	The effect of urine and ryegrass treatments on soil $CO_2$ fluxes ( $\mu g CO_2 kg^{-1} s^{-1}$ ) at (a) $11^\circ C$ , (b) $19^\circ C$ and (c) $23^\circ C$ . Values are means ( $n = 3$ ) and error bars represent SEM. The fitted solid and dotted lines represent the exponential decay model (eqn. 5.5) fitted to the data for the <i>ryegrass + urine</i> and <i>soil + urine</i> treatments, respectively. The parameters for the models were described in Table 5.5. The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase of the soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application). ..	101
Figure 5.5	Soil $CO_2$ fluxes ( $F_{CO_2}$ ) as a function of temperature (a) at the initial peak immediately following the urine treatment and (b) at 672 h following the urine treatment. Bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ). Solid and dashed lines represent the best Lloyd and Taylor (1994) model fitted to <i>soil + urine</i> and <i>ryegrass + urine</i> treatments (a), and <i>ryegrass control</i> and <i>ryegrass + urine</i> treatments (b). The parameters ( $E_0$ and $R_{10}$ ) are next to the corresponding curves, with the standard errors of the parameters. ....	103
Figure 5.6	The $\delta^{13}C$ values of soil-respired $CO_2$ over time. Error bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ). The horizontal dashed and dotted lines represent the $\delta^{13}C$ values of soil	

organic matter C ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}$ ) and of root-respired $\text{CO}_2$ ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}$ ), respectively (see Table 5.7). The lines were shown on the figures to indicate the $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ values of the two potential contributing sources of the $\text{CO}_2$ flux. The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase of the soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application).....	107
Figure 5.7 The effect of urine and ryegrass treatments on $f_{\text{OM}}$ over time (h) at (a) 11°C, (b) 19°C and (c) 23°C. The error bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ). The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase of the soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application).....	108
Figure 5.8 The effect of temperature, ryegrass and urine treatments on the contribution of $f_{\text{OM}}$ to the $\text{CO}_2$ flux, (a) 24 h, (b) 360 h, and (c) 552 h following a urine application. The error bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ). .....	111
Figure 5.9 Photosynthesis rates ( $\mu\text{mol CO}_2 \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ ) of ryegrass plants in the <i>ryegrass+urine</i> and <i>ryegrass control</i> treatments at (a) 11°C, (b) 19°C and (c) 23°C over time (h). The measurements were taken 96 h before the urine application (-96 h), and 240 h and 552 h following the urine application. Values are means of 6 measurements taken from three different pots and the error bars represent SEM ( $n = 6$ ). The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase in soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application). ..	112
Figure 5.10 Temperature response of the carbon assimilation rates, at 552 h, of ryegrass with (○) and without (●) urine treatment. Error bars represent SEM ( $n = 4$ )...	113

## List of Abbreviations

C	Carbon
CO <sub>2</sub>	Carbon dioxide EGM      Environmental gas monitor
$F_{\text{CO}_2}$	Soil carbon dioxide flux
<i>GPP</i>	Gross primary production
N	Nitrogen
N <sub>2</sub> O	Nitrous oxide
<i>NEP</i>	Net ecosystem respiration
<i>NPP</i>	Net primary production
$R_E$	Ecosystem respiration
$R_H$	Heterotrophic respiration
$R_{\text{LEAF}}$	Leaf respiration
$R_M$	Soil microbial respiration
$R_{\text{OM}}$	Soil organic matter decomposition
$R_{\text{RD}}$	Root derived carbon respiration
$R_{\text{RHIZ}}$	Rhizosphere respiration
$R_{\text{ROOT}}$	Root respiration
$R_S$	Soil respiration
TDL	Tunable diode laser
$T_S$	Soil temperature

# Chapter 1

## Introduction

### 1.1 Background

This thesis reports the outcomes of a PhD research project where the overall theme of the study was to identify the effects of substrate, temperature and soil fertility on soil respiration ( $R_S$ ) and  $N_2O$  emissions from pastoral soils. Soil respiration occurs as a result of microbial or plant processes. The substrate supply for  $R_S$  is affected by soil temperature ( $T_S$ ) (Jacobson and Alexander, 1980; Kirschbaum, 2006). Carbon (C) substrates for soil microbes are provided by plants but there is considerable debate around the potential interactions that occur between C substrate inputs from plants, soil microbial activity, and  $T_S$  (Pendall et al., 2008).

Rates of  $R_S$  are very sensitive to changes in  $T_S$ . One model suggests that a  $1^\circ\text{C}$  increase of  $T_S$  at  $10^\circ\text{C}$  causes a 10% increase in  $R_S$  (Lloyd and Taylor, 1994). It is hypothesised that a small change in  $R_S$  could have a significant impact on atmospheric  $\text{CO}_2$  concentrations since terrestrial ecosystems, including vegetation and soils, are one of main reservoirs of C on Earth, containing 2200 Gt C, or approximately three times the C in the atmosphere (Schimel, 1995).

According to the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (IPCC), the global average surface temperature has been increasing and this trend is likely to continue (IPCC, 2007a). Future climate scenarios have been assessed and a warming of  $0.2^\circ\text{C}$  per decade is projected. It is considered likely that global warming will influence  $R_S$  and soil  $N_2O$  emissions but uncertainty remains high with regards to the magnitude of the influences caused by global warming (Rustad et al., 2000).

Soil  $N_2O$  emissions are generated by microbial nitrification and denitrification processes and these processes are regulated by temperature. Soil  $N_2O$  emissions from pastoral ecosystems are an important contributor to the global  $N_2O$  budget (Oenema et al., 1997) and global warming is also expected to impact upon  $N_2O$  emissions from soils (Smith, 1997). Despite this there are very few studies that have examined the effects of temperature on  $N_2O$  fluxes in pastoral ecosystems and none that have examined the effect of  $T_S$  changes on urine-N derived  $N_2O$  fluxes.

If the uncertainty surrounding the prediction of future changes in  $R_S$  and soil  $N_2O$  emissions, with respect to global warming, is to be reduced then the C substrate supplying processes



from the plants must also be considered. The availability and the amount of the C substrate required to perform  $R_S$  may be reduced or depleted when plants are not actively growing and plant activity is influenced by temperature. Carbon substrate is also required for soil  $N_2O$  emissions when  $N_2O$  is produced via heterotrophic processes. Hence, the temperature response of  $R_S$  and soil  $N_2O$  emissions is controlled by the complex interaction of soil/plant/animal processes and the interaction is not well understood.

## 1.2 Research objectives

The objectives of this project were to:

- Quantify the interaction between  $T_S$  and soil substrate availability on soil microbial activity in the absence of plant substrate inputs; Chapter 3.
- Determine the temperature response of respiration sourced from root-derived C ( $R_{RD}$ ) and soil organic matter decomposition ( $R_{OM}$ ) in two pasture soils of contrasting nutrient status, with and without plants present; Chapter 4.
- Investigate the effects of urine application,  $T_S$ , and plants on soil  $N_2O$  and carbon dioxide ( $CO_2$ ) fluxes; Chapter 5.

## 1.3 Thesis structure

This thesis is divided into 6 chapters. The first and second chapters provide a general introduction and a review of the relevant literature, respectively. The following three chapters (3, 4 and 5) contain short introductions, materials and methods, results and discussion sections. Finally chapter six provides an overall discussion, summary and recommendations for future work. In brief each chapter contains the following:

- |           |  |
|-----------|--|
| Chapter 1 | This chapter briefly introduces information on processes pertaining to $R_S$ and $N_2O$ emissions in pasture soils and the global importance of these processes.   |
| Chapter 2 | This chapter is a literature review that describes the current knowledge of $R_S$ and soil $N_2O$ emissions from pasture soils. It has been suggested that increasing global temperature will exert a positive feedback with respect to global warming. However, there are many sources of uncertainty in the prediction of future $R_S$ as the review shows. To the best of my knowledge there are very few if any studies that have examined the implications of global warming with respect to N cycling in pasture soils and associated $N_2O$ |

emissions. This review discusses these aspects and states a case for the research performed.

- Chapter 3      This chapter discusses the responses of soil microbial respiration to changes in  $T_s$  and substrate availability. The experiment was performed using a fertile pasture soil without plants present.
- Chapter 4      This chapter describes the responses of root-derived C respiration ( $R_{RD}$ ) and soil organic matter decomposition ( $R_{OM}$ ) to changing  $T_s$ , in two pasture soils of contrasting nutrient status. The experiment was performed using soils with plants, and  $R_{RD}$  and  $R_{OM}$  were separated using a natural  $^{13}\text{C}$  stable isotope abundance technique.
- Chapter 5      This chapter reports a laboratory experiment that focused on  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions and  $R_s$  following a bovine urine deposition event at different  $T_s$  in the presence of plants. A natural  $^{13}\text{C}$  abundance technique was used in this experiment to determine  $\text{CO}_2$  sources while the bovine urine was  $^{15}\text{N}$ -enriched in order to assess the N source of the  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions.
- Chapter 6      This chapter summarizes the major findings reported in this thesis and contains recommendations for future research.

## Chapter 2

### Literature Review

#### 2.1 Introduction

Pastoral ecosystems provide most of the milk, wool and much of the meat for human consumption (Humphreys, 1997). The increasing global population has been placing pressure on pastoral ecosystems to increase their production efficiency. At the same time, there is an increasing demand for pastoral ecosystem production to be performed in an environmentally sustainable way (White, 2000).

Pastoral ecosystems play a key role in regulating global carbon (C) and nitrogen (N) budgets because pastoral soils are an important reservoir of both organic C and N (Amundson, 2001). Unlike forest ecosystems, pastoral ecosystems are dominated by fast-growing plant species and they are disturbed by grazing animals (Bardgett and Wardle, 2003). In pastoral ecosystems plants assimilate C via photosynthesis. Plants also need inorganic forms of N for their growth. The ruminant grazing animal subsequently disaggregates the C and N combined in the herbage pool, with N redistributed predominantly in the urine stream while C dominates in the dung stream. There is also a considerable loss of C in the form of methane ( $\text{CH}_4$ ) during enteric fermentation (Johnson and Johnson, 1995). The latter is not considered hereafter. Carbon and N may also be returned to the pasture soil via plant litter (Schuman et al., 1999). Subsequently some of the C and N deposited onto the pasture soil, in the various organic pools, may be returned to the atmosphere as carbon dioxide ( $\text{CO}_2$ ) via soil respiration ( $R_s$ ) processes or as nitrogenous gases such as ammonia and nitrous oxide ( $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ ) via N transformation processes (Flessa et al., 2002).

Nitrous oxide is a greenhouse gas and a precursor to compounds responsible for stratospheric ozone depletion (Ravishankara et al., 2009). Currently atmospheric concentrations of  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  are increasing at  $0.26\% \text{ yr}^{-1}$  (Forster et al., 2007). Worldwide, grazed pastures are responsible for more than 10% of the global  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions (Oenema et al., 1997). Concentrations of atmospheric  $\text{CO}_2$  are also increasing at a rate of  $1.4 \mu\text{l l}^{-1} \text{ yr}^{-1}$  mainly due to anthropogenic activities such as the combustion of fossil fuels (Forster et al., 2007).

Despite the global efforts of governments and organizations to reduce greenhouse gas emissions, the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (IPCC) concluded in its fourth Assessment Report (2007b) that both greenhouse gas emissions and the global average

surface temperature have been increasing and that these trends are likely to continue. Future atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations, simulated by the coupled climate-carbon cycle models, range between 730 and 1020  $\mu\text{l l}^{-1}$  by 2100, the former value is approximately twice the atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentration in 2005 (Meehl et al., 2007). An expert assessment performed by the IPCC concluded that if the atmospheric concentrations of greenhouse gases continue to increase at the current rate then average global surface temperatures by 2090 to 2099 are predicted to increase by as much as 4.0°C (range of 2.4°C to 6.4°C) compared to the period 1980-1999. (Meehl et al., 2007).

Such an increase in the global surface temperature could potentially alter many enzymatic activities in pastoral ecosystems, e.g. photosynthesis and soil microbial activities. For example, studies have reported that global warming will reduce the efficiency of terrestrial ecosystems to absorb atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> (e.g. Cox et al., 2000) because under a warmer climate,  $R_S$  is more likely to increase compared to net primary productivity. As a result, the IPCC has predicted that global warming will increase the fraction of anthropogenic derived CO<sub>2</sub> that remains in the atmosphere thus leading to an additional increase in the atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentration (Denman et al., 2007).

However, the response of soil processes to changes in soil temperature ( $T_S$ ) depends on many factors (Luo, 2007). For example, the temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$ , the relative increase in  $R_S$  per unit increase in  $T_S$ , decreases with increasing  $T_S$  (Lloyd and Taylor, 1994). Hence, the effect of global warming on soil processes may depend on the average value of  $T_S$  at the site (Lloyd and Taylor, 1994; Tjoelker et al., 2001). Heterotrophic  $R_S$  and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions depend on C substrate availability and this availability influences the response of soil heterotrophic processes to  $T_S$ . For example,  $R_S$  has been shown to be less sensitive to  $T_S$  when  $R_S$  utilises the more readily available C substrates (Davidson and Janssens, 2006) or when substrate concentration is low (Davidson et al., 2006). Other factors such as plant activity can also influence the substrate supply and availability in soils and the relationship between aboveground plant processes and belowground soil processes are still not fully understood (Atkin et al., 2005; Pendall et al., 2008).

Currently there are no studies that have simultaneously examined the temperature sensitivity of both C and N cycling in grazed pasture ecosystems and very few studies have been performed to investigate the temperature sensitivity of soil processes in pastoral ecosystems. Undoubtedly this is a result of the complexity of the issues. In this literature review, the current understanding of the temperature sensitivities of both C and N dynamics in pastoral ecosystems are reviewed.

## 2.2 Soil respiration in pastoral ecosystems

### 2.2.1 Carbon cycling in pastoral ecosystems

In pastoral ecosystems, the largest C input occurs via photosynthesis and is subsequently termed gross primary productivity (*GPP*). Gross primary productivity was estimated to range from 100 to 120 Pg C yr<sup>-1</sup> (Houghton and Woodwell, 1989). Plants fix CO<sub>2</sub> from the air and assimilate it forming organic C compounds through photosynthesis. A portion of the organic C fixed by plants is utilised to supply the plants with energy. This process is called plant respiration and CO<sub>2</sub> is released back into the atmosphere through this process. Plant respiration is also called autotrophic respiration and can be separated into aboveground ( $R_{\text{LEAF}}$ ) and belowground plant respiration ( $R_{\text{ROOT}}$ ). A pasture plant (*Lolium perenne*) allocates about 50% of the total assimilated C to the belowground pool (Domanski et al., 2001). Photosynthetically assimilated C is translocated rapidly to the soil. For example, within 24 h, approximately 12% of the total assimilated C in annual ryegrass plants (*Lolium multiflorum* Lam.) was found in the soil (Butler et al., 2004). Similarly, a study performed on a dairy farm pasture reported that 1.2 – 4.0% of the C uptake by plant leaves was transferred to the soil within 4 h (Saggar and Hedley, 2001).

Pastoral ecosystems also produce CO<sub>2</sub> during the microbial decomposition of litter and soil organic matter, a process called ‘heterotrophic respiration ( $R_{\text{H}}$ )’. Soil microbial respiration also occurs in the rhizosphere, a zone immediately adjacent to the root surface (Richards, 1987), and this respiration process is called microbial rhizosphere respiration ( $R_{\text{RHIZ}}$ ). Thus, the total CO<sub>2</sub> emission from a pastoral ecosystem ( $R_{\text{E}}$ ) can be estimated by eqn. 2.1:

$$R_{\text{E}} = R_{\text{LEAF}} + R_{\text{ROOT}} + R_{\text{RHIZ}} + R_{\text{H}} \quad (2.1)$$

The total CO<sub>2</sub> emission from the soil surface, total soil respiration ( $R_{\text{S}}$ ), is the sum of the belowground plant respiration ( $R_{\text{ROOT}}$ ), microbial rhizosphere respiration ( $R_{\text{RHIZ}}$ ) and the heterotrophic respiration ( $R_{\text{H}}$ ) components (eqn. 2.2):

$$R_{\text{S}} = R_{\text{ROOT}} + R_{\text{RHIZ}} + R_{\text{H}} \quad (2.2)$$

Net primary production (*NPP*) is defined as *GPP* less the cost of autotrophic respiration and is a measure of the rate at which energy is stored by plants in the form of organic substances (Redmann, 1992) thus it is defined as (eqn. 2.3):

$$NPP = GPP - R_{\text{LEAF}} - R_{\text{ROOT}} \quad (2.3)$$

Net ecosystem production (*NEP*) is classified as the total CO<sub>2</sub> exchange at an ecosystem level and is the *GPP* less ecosystem respiration (*R<sub>E</sub>*) and is defined as eqn. 2.4:

$$NEP = GPP - R_E \quad (2.4)$$

It has long been known that aboveground processes, for example, *GPP* strongly control belowground C inputs and *R<sub>S</sub>* (Raich and Nadelhoffer, 1989). However, specific mechanisms of belowground CO<sub>2</sub> production processes in soil are less clear (Pendall et al., 2008).

Continuous studies on the belowground processes in pastoral ecosystems are still required because pastoral soils contain approximately 30% of global soil C stocks (White et al., 2000) and are considered as a sink or source for CO<sub>2</sub> (Johnson et al., 1995). A review article on *R<sub>S</sub>* in pastoral ecosystems has shown that reported values of *R<sub>S</sub>* in temperate grassland vary from 52 to 1004 g C m<sup>-2</sup> yr<sup>-1</sup> and that the factors controlling *R<sub>S</sub>* (e.g. temperature and grazing) vary among sites, with the review concluding that the reasons for the variability were poorly understood (Wang and Fang, 2009).

## **2.2.2 Soil respiration processes**

Total soil respiration (*R<sub>S</sub>*) is the sum of the respiration processes that occur in belowground plant tissues and soil microbial activity (eqn. 2.2). Physiologically, respiration is a series of metabolic processes that break down organic C containing compounds to liberate energy, water, and CO<sub>2</sub> in a cell (Luo and Zhou, 2006). Carbon-containing compounds are used as the substrate for *R<sub>S</sub>*. The C substrates in soils are derived from organic material and these can be separated into fresh, incompletely decomposed material, and well decomposed material known as ‘humus’ (Kononova, 1966). Since these C compounds decay and accumulate at different rates (Schlesinger, 1977), *R<sub>S</sub>* can be delineated according to sources of C substrate supply. This section of the literature review outlines each of the *R<sub>S</sub>* processes according to the C substrate source utilised.

### **2.2.2.1 Root respiration**

Root respiration utilises relatively labile C substrates, for example, sugars, proteins, lipids, and other materials produced within the plant (Thornley, 1970). In a laboratory experiment using ryegrass plants, *R<sub>ROOT</sub>* accounted for between 1.5 and 6.5% of the photosynthetically assimilated C over an 8 day period (Kuzyakov et al., 1999). Photosynthetically fixed C has been shown to be respired by roots within 30 minutes, thus the shoot to root transport of C in plants is a very rapid process (Weixin et al., 1993). Total plant respiration, including *R<sub>LEAF</sub>* and *R<sub>ROOT</sub>*, is therefore strongly related to photosynthesis and plant growth (Lloyd and Farquhar, 2008). The maintenance respiration rate of roots is linearly correlated to the root

weight (Veen, 1981). In general, root production in pastoral ecosystems is proportional to the aboveground production but the relationship between shoot and root growth is dynamic due to seasonal and plant growth stage effects and grazing events (Garwood, 1967; Kuzyakov et al., 1999; Matthew and Yang, 1998; Meharg and Killham, 1990; Schuman et al., 1999).

#### **2.2.2.2 Rhizosphere respiration and root-derived C respiration**

The release of substances into the soil from root surfaces is termed rhizodeposition, and because of this process the soil adjacent to the root presents a favourable habitat for soil microorganisms and is termed the rhizosphere (Shamroot et al., 1968). In the rhizosphere, the population density of soil microbes is higher when compared to that of the bulk soil (Buyer et al., 2002; Waldrop and Firestone, 2004a). The microbes in the rhizosphere respire using the substrates released from the roots ( $R_{RHIZ}$ ). A previous study using ryegrass plants has reported that 2.0 to 8.0% of the photosynthetically assimilated C was respired in the rhizosphere within 8 days, and these values were similar to those of  $R_{ROOT}$  from the same study noted above (Kuzyakov et al., 1999).

Both the plant roots and the microbial rhizosphere respiration processes utilise the recently produced C substrates from plants (Lynch and Whipps, 1990). Many previous studies have termed the sum of the respiration that occurs as a result of  $R_{ROOT}$  and  $R_{RHIZ}$ , autotrophic respiration,  $R_A$  (e.g. Olsson et al., 2005; Tang and Baldocchi, 2005). However, this frequently used term is incorrect because microbes in the rhizosphere decomposing the recently added C substrates are heterotrophic microbes (Bond-Lamberty et al., 2004; Kuzyakov, 2006).

Hence, in this thesis, the terms ‘root-derived C respiration ( $R_{RD}$ )’ and ‘soil organic matter C decomposition ( $R_{OM}$ )’ will be used. The root-derived C respiration is defined as the sum of  $R_{ROOT}$  and  $R_{RHIZ}$  since they utilise the recently produced soil C substrates from plants. Similar to this approach, Kirschbaum (2004) modelled soil C substrate dynamics using a system consisting of just two substrate pools, a fast and a slow pool and the same approach has been taken in other previous studies (e.g. Melillo et al., 2002; Trumbore, 2000). Soil organic matter C decomposition is defined below (section 2.2.2.3).

According to a review article, the contributions of  $R_{RD}$  to  $R_S$  can be as high as 90% hence  $R_{RD}$  is a very important component of  $R_S$  (Hanson et al., 2000). A large percentage (64 to 86%) of the C substrates added to soils are rapidly respired but about 2 to 5% of the net C assimilated by plants remains in the soil (Hütsch et al., 2002) and plays a critical role in the formation of soil organic matter. Soil organic matter is relatively more stable and less microbially available compared to the root-derived C. Despite this fact the less labile soil organic matter can be

utilised for respiration although the breakdown of soil organic matter involves complex processes.

#### **2.2.2.3 Decomposition of soil organic matter and ' $R_{OM}$ '**

A large proportion of the soil organic matter pool is stabilised and protected from physical, chemical, and/or biochemical decomposition (Six et al., 2002). Hence, soil organic matter is decomposed very slowly when compared to the root-derived C pool. The size of the soil organic matter C pool is much larger than the size of the root-derived C pool in the soil (Gaudinski et al., 2000). Hence, in the absence of rhizodeposition soil microbes can only utilise the existing soil organic matter pool and they produce  $CO_2$  at a relatively low but constant rate, over long periods (Joergensen et al., 1990). In forest soils the average age of soil organic matter C, based on  $^{14}C$  measurements, ranged from 200 to 1200 yr, but the age of the C respired averaged 7 yr because the predominant C source for  $R_S$  was  $R_{RD}$  (Trumbore, 2000). Similarly, the age of soil organic matter C in pasture soils can be up to 12,000 years in deep (80 cm depth) soils at high altitude but the age of C measured in  $R_S$  from pastoral soils has been reported to range from 15 to 31 yr (Townsend and Vitousek, 1995). Hence, the contribution of  $R_{OM}$  to  $R_S$  is relatively low when plants are present. However, the soil organic matter C pool is considerably larger than the root-derived C pool and so interest in changes in the rate of soil organic matter decomposition, as a consequence of changes in  $T_S$ , has increased because of its importance to the global C cycle (Trumbore, 2000).

#### **2.2.2.4 Priming effect**

The presence of living plants may increase  $R_{OM}$  by 3- to 5-fold, or decrease its rates by 10% to 30% (Kuzyakov, 2002). This change in  $R_{OM}$  is due to a process termed the 'priming effect' (Parnas, 1976). In a review paper by Kuzyakov (2002), seven possible mechanisms to explain priming effects were suggested: 1) the presence of plants results in faster drying-rewetting cycles in soil, thus increasing  $R_{OM}$ ; 2) breaking down of soil aggregates by growing roots exposes a portion of the physically protected soil organic matter pool to soil microbial attack; 3) plant root uptake of organic substances reduces the size of available soil organic matter pool for microbes, thus reducing  $R_{OM}$ ; 4) increasing microbial activity in the rhizosphere enhances microbial turnover and consequently increases the release of mineral N and  $CO_2$ ; 5) the presence of plants induces competition for mineral N between plant roots and soil microbes, thereby depressing  $R_{OM}$ ; 6) soil microbes prefer to respire the root-derived C compared with soil organic matter C, resulting in a decrease in  $R_{OM}$  due to the presence of plant root exudation; 7) soil microbial activity increases in the rhizosphere and this leads to an



increase in  $R_{OM}$  in order to obtain limiting N that has become limiting as a result of the enhanced microbial activity.

It has been concluded that although all of the mechanisms above are involved in priming, the biological factors are considered to be more important than the physical factors (Dormaar, 1990). A reason for this is that the growth stage of plants and the intensity of photosynthesis both influence the magnitude of the priming effect (Kuzyakov and Cheng, 2001a; Kuzyakov et al., 2001). A previous study has suggested that the absence of light caused a reduction in the priming effect because root-derived C inputs from the plant (wheat) decreased in the absence of photosynthesis (Kuzyakov and Cheng, 2001a). The priming effect may also be influenced by soil fertility because plants allocate a relatively larger percentage of their net C assimilation to the belowground C pool in low fertility soils compared to high fertility soils (Warembourg and Esterlich, 2001). In addition, the mineral N status in soils, which is influenced by soil fertility, may influence priming effects because  $R_{OM}$  is enhanced when soil mineral N is low (Bremer and Kuikman, 1997).

However, very few studies have investigated the combined effects of different plants or soils on  $R_{OM}$  in one experiment (Kuzyakov, 2002) and further studies are required to elucidate the role of plants.

### **2.2.3 Factors controlling soil respiration**

The components of  $R_S$  discussed above involve many different chemical, physical, and biological processes and these are influenced by various biotic and abiotic factors. These factors include substrate quantity and availability, soil fertility and temperature.

#### **2.2.3.1 Substrate quantity and availability**

In soils, respiration sourced from root-derived C is influenced by plant photosynthesis and plant growth rates since the root-derived C substrates are exuded by or sloughed off plant roots. The residence times of root-derived C substrates are relatively short. In pasture soils  $R_S$  was shown to decrease by 70% within a week following the application of clipping and shading treatments to aboveground vegetation (Craine et al., 1999; Wan and Luo, 2003). Clipping and shading treatments reduce photosynthesis by limiting the light received by the plants, thus there is a clear link between whole plant C gain and  $R_S$ . In pastoral ecosystems, a large proportion of  $R_S$  originates from the decomposition of recently added and highly available root-derived C substrates from plants (Domanski et al., 2001).

Without plants present,  $R_S$  in pastoral soils decreases rapidly but can continue at a low rate for an extensive period of time. Feng and Simpson (2009) reported that without plants present,  $R_S$

in a grassland soil was  $12.6 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$  at 1 d following the start of an incubation at  $20^\circ\text{C}$ , the  $R_S$  rate decreased 40% in the first week and then the  $R_S$  rate slowly decreased to be  $1.3 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$  after 370 d. This decline was due to soil microbes only having more recalcitrant C substrates available for respiration, compared to the root-derived C substrates. Plant residues are normally the last to start degrading and are decomposed relatively slowly (Berg et al., 1982). However, the decomposition of recalcitrant C is not limited by substrate supply because recalcitrant C is relatively abundant in soils. In a pasture soil, it was shown that only 1.4 – 3.8% of total soil C was available to microbes and the rest was relatively recalcitrant, when the soil was incubated at  $20^\circ - 40^\circ\text{C}$  for 225 d (Townsend et al., 1997).

### 2.2.3.2 Temperature

The relationship between temperature and the biochemical respiration process can be described by an exponential equation (van't Hoff, 1884) or an Arrhenius equation (Arrhenius, 1898). To express the influence of temperature on  $R_S$ , the term “temperature sensitivity” has been recently used in studies of  $R_S$  (e.g. Davidson and Janssens, 2006). This term defines the relative change in  $R_S$  caused by a particular range of temperature change. Temperature sensitivity is often shown as a  $Q_{10}$  value (Singh and Gupta, 1977). The  $Q_{10}$  value is a factor that represents the increase in  $R_S$  rates when a temperature is raised by  $10^\circ\text{C}$ . If there is an exponential relationship between  $R_S$  and temperature, then the following equation (eqn. 2.5) can be used to calculate the  $Q_{10}$  value by assuming  $Q_{10}$  is a constant over the temperature range, where  $R_2$  and  $R_1$  are  $R_S$  observed at temperatures  $T_2$  and  $T_1$  respectively (Fang and Moncrieff, 2001).

$$Q_{10} = \left( \frac{R_2}{R_1} \right)^{10(T_2 - T_1)} \quad (2.5)$$

Early studies of  $R_S$  often expressed the relationship between  $R_S$  and temperature using a constant  $Q_{10}$  value of approximately 2 (Singh and Gupta, 1977). However, a more recent study suggested that the use of a constant  $Q_{10}$  value did not express the relationship very well. Lloyd and Taylor (1994) reported that the  $Q_{10}$  value changed widely over different temperature ranges and the  $Q_{10}$  value was larger at a lower temperature range. Hence, according to Lloyd and Taylor (1994), when no other factors are limiting  $R_S$ , the rate of  $R_S$  and  $T_S$  have an Arrhenius type relationship as follows (eqn. 2.6):

$$R = R_{10} e^{E_0 \left( \frac{1}{283.15 - T_0} - \frac{1}{T_S - T_0} \right)} \quad (2.6)$$

where  $R_{10}$  is the rate of  $R_S$  at  $10^\circ\text{C}$  and  $E_0$  is a parameter related to the activation energy. The parameter  $T_0$  describes a temperature (K) when  $R = 0$ . Using the Lloyd and Taylor model (eqn. 2.6), a  $1^\circ\text{C}$  increase in temperature increases  $R_S$  by 10% at  $10^\circ\text{C}$  when no other factors are limiting  $R_S$  (Lloyd and Taylor, 1994). Other limiting factors of  $R_S$  can be nutrient supply, soil moisture, and the availability of soil organic matter. This is notable given the current predictions of future mean global surface temperature at 2090 to 2099 may be as much as  $4^\circ\text{C}$  higher compared to the mean global temperature over the period 1980 to 1999.

### **2.2.3.3 *Effects of substrate supply and availability on the temperature sensitivity of soil respiration***

Despite many experimental reports, there is still no scientific consensus on the temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$  (Kirschbaum, 2006). Kirschbaum (2006) concluded that substrate availability played a critical role in determining the temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$ , and that if the substrate availability changed during the period of measurement then this would confound the resulting temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$ . For example, when no factors but temperature are affecting  $R_S$ , the faster  $R_S$  that occurs at a warmer temperature depletes the available C pool relatively quicker, thus reducing the  $R_S$  rate. All things being equal substrate depletion is less likely to occur under cooler conditions. Hence, changes in C substrate pools at different temperature may bias the inferred temperature sensitivity (Gu et al., 2004).

An increase in  $T_S$  can also increase plant photosynthesis and subsequent root-derived C substrate supply. Substrate depletion of the root-derived C pool can occur if the rate of C input is smaller than the  $R_S$  rate. For example, Piao et al. (2008) reported that, based on the analysis of the changes in the atmospheric  $\text{CO}_2$  concentration over the past two decades, there was a trend towards an earlier autumn-to-winter  $\text{CO}_2$  build-up in the atmosphere, suggesting increasing soil C losses in autumn. Piao et al. (2008) concluded that while both plant photosynthesis and  $R_S$  increased during autumn warming the increase in  $R_S$  was greater. Autumn temperatures over the research period focused on by Piao et al. (2008) rose by  $0.8^\circ\text{C}$  over two decades. Conversely, Piao et al. (2008) found spring warming enhanced C sequestration because of a longer growing season and greater photosynthetic activity due to an increase in the average spring  $T_S$  ( $1.1^\circ\text{C}$ ) over the two decade study period. Piao et al. (2008) concluded that the increase in  $R_S$  during autumn warming was offsetting 90% of the increased  $\text{CO}_2$  uptake during spring and that the predicted increase in global surface temperature may change this balance between  $R_S$  and  $\text{CO}_2$  uptake. Hence, the relationship between substrate supply and  $R_S$  can contribute significant uncertainty to future projections for the effects of global warming on terrestrial ecosystems (Luo, 2007).

The temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$  also increases with the increasing molecular complexity of the C substrate (Bosatta and Ågren, 1999; Davidson and Janssens, 2006). Hence, in soils, organic matter decomposition is theoretically more temperature sensitive compared to respiration sourced from root-derived C because the molecular complexity of root-derived C is less than that of organic C. Work by Hartley and Ineson (2008), supporting this theory, showed that without plant C inputs, the temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$  increased significantly as incubation time increased. Hartley and Ineson (2008) incubated a garden soil for 124 d without plants over a temperature range of 10° to 20°C. The  $Q_{10}$  values increased from 3.0 at day 7 to 3.2 at day 124, as the recalcitrance of the soil C increased. However, equal temperature sensitivities have also been reported for the decomposition of soil C with variable recalcitrance (Bååth and Wallander, 2003; Conen et al., 2006). Davidson et al. (2006) have proposed that the variability in the temperature sensitivities of  $R_S$  are due to the multiplicative effects of several temperature-sensitive processes, namely, diffusion of oxygen and soluble C substrates through the air and water phases of the soil, diffusion of C substrates across cellular membranes, growth of microbial populations and root tissues, and enzyme activity. Bradford et al. (2008) also reported, using a > 15 year soil warming experiment, that in the long-term, the temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$  was influenced not only by the substrate depletion but also by the thermal adaptation of microbial respiration. Further research is required in this area to improve the understanding of the variability in temperature sensitivities of  $R_S$ .

#### **2.2.3.4 Soil fertility and microbial biomass**

Soil respiration is strongly related to *NPP* of plants (section 2.2.1) and soil fertility is a key factor determining the *NPP* (Robertson et al., 1997). In this thesis, soil fertility is defined as the soil's nutrient availability. Soil fertility controls the decomposition rate of soil C substrates (Melillo et al., 1982). For example, an experiment performed in Hawaiian forests showed that N and phosphorus (P) availability controlled the decomposition of litter in soil (Hobbie and Vitousek, 2000). A similar study performed in a grassland ecosystem has concluded that soil microbial respiration was limited by P availability, whereas N limited soil microbial respiration in soils with high levels of available P (Amador and Jones, 1993). A study by Hobbie and Vitousek (2000) found that other factors in addition to nutrient availability, for example, the abundance of soil fauna (i.e. earthworms and insects), also controlled the rates of  $R_S$ .

Soil fertility influences soil microbial community structure and population (Mawdsley and Bardgett, 1997; Orchard et al., 1992) and in pastoral ecosystems,  $R_S$  has been shown to be related to soil N status. For example, Lovell et al. (1995) reported that soils receiving

continuous inputs of N fertiliser over a long term had a reduced root mass compared to unfertilised soils which subsequently resulted in lower microbial biomass and lower  $R_S$ . Bardgett et al. (1999) also observed a biomass effect when they measured higher  $R_S$  from low-input, unfertilised grasslands than from intensively managed systems and they concluded this was because of the reduced size of the active microbial biomass in intensively managed systems. It was shown by Bardgett et al. (1999) that the proportion of fungi relative to bacteria increased in the unfertilised grasslands, suggesting the microbial community structure also plays a key role in determining  $R_S$  response. Further studies are required to determine the significance of soil fertility in pastoral ecosystems with respect to  $R_S$ .

#### **2.2.3.5 Urine effects on soil respiration and C substrate supply**

Soil organic matter decomposition rates ( $R_{OM}$ ) respond positively to urine applications. For example, Kelliher et al. (2005b) showed that following a urine application,  $R_{OM}$  in a sieved pasture soil increased for 9 d when compared to  $R_{OM}$  in a control soil. Plant growth and plant nutrient uptake have also been shown to be improved for approximately 2 months following urine deposition onto pasture (During and McNaught, 1961). Given the significance of the relationship between plant growth and  $R_S$  described above (section 2.2.1) it would be expected that this enhanced plant growth would enhance root-derived C supply. However, Vines and Wedding (1960) reported that the large concentrations of ammonia reduced the respiration sourced from root-derived C because of the ammonia's potential toxic effect, although plants were treated with gaseous ammonia rather than urine-derived ammonia in this study.

Urine deposition onto pasture ultimately leads to higher plant N content (Bol et al., 2004). As N content increases so too does the photosynthetic capacity of plants (Schulze et al., 1994). Thus this increases the supply of root-derived C. In fact Burton et al. (2000) stated that  $R_{RD}$  was more dependent on N availability than  $T_S$ . The study by Burton et al. (2000) proposed that greater metabolic activity of roots in N-rich zones lead to greater C allocation to those roots, and thus increases in  $R_{RD}$  (at a given temperature) occur when a soil's available N content is higher. Ruminant urine deposition also increases soil microbial utilisation of C substrates, based on a community level physiological profiles analysis, and increases the number of bacteria which in turn affects C substrate respiration (section 2.2.3.4) (Williams et al., 2000).

Shand et al. (2002) reported significant root scorching and the death of roots following urine deposition as a result of the ensuing high soil pH (~ 9.0). Approximately 6% of the live roots had been killed 56 d after urine treatment (Shand et al., 2002). Dead roots are readily

decomposed by soil microorganisms (Larionova et al., 2006). In addition, solubilisation of soil organic C has been shown to occur following urine application. Water-soluble C levels increased from 104 to 1090 mg C kg<sup>-1</sup> within 5 h following a urine application when the urine was applied to a clipped pasture soil (Monaghan and Barraclough, 1993). Thus urine deposition has an indirect effect on  $R_S$  by stimulating the release of C substrate suitable for  $R_S$ . Contrary to this are the results of Ambus et al. (2007) who stated that  $R_S$  was unaffected by urine deposition and that the increase of soil CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes was mainly due to urea hydrolysis. However, Clough and Kelliher (2005) showed that, in a pasture soil at 20°C, CO<sub>2</sub> produced from  $R_S$  following a urine application was greater than the amount of CO<sub>2</sub> that could have been produced solely from the urine. Clough and Kelliher (2005) concluded that the priming effect was induced by the urine application and this led to the increase (45%) in  $R_S$ .

#### **2.2.4 Methods to investigate the factors controlling soil respiration in pasture soils**

Ecosystem models predict an increase in  $R_S$  in response to increasing  $T_S$  but with high degrees of uncertainty (Schimel et al., 1994). One of the areas in which the models are not successful is predicting which of the C pools is utilised (soil organic matter or root-derived C) (Zobitz et al., 2008). As noted above this literature review does not emphasize the distinction between  $R_{\text{ROOT}}$  and  $R_{\text{RHIZ}}$  and the sum of the two respiration pathways is termed ' $R_{\text{RD}}$ '. Theoretically, it is possible to separately quantify  $R_{\text{ROOT}}$  and  $R_{\text{RHIZ}}$  but currently available methods have difficulty in accurately quantifying the two components (Kuzyakov, 2004).

A review article (Hanson et al., 2000) concluded that the approaches for measuring  $R_{\text{RD}}$  and  $R_{\text{OM}}$  could be broadly separated into three categories: component integration, root exclusion, and isotopic approaches. Isotopic methods have an advantage over component integration and root exclusion methods because they avoid the disturbance effects and they can measure  $R_{\text{RD}}$  and  $R_{\text{OM}}$  concurrently. The isotopic method approach is described in section 2.2.4.1. Other methods involve the removal of roots from soils and are based on the assumption that the  $R_{\text{OM}}$  and  $R_{\text{RD}}$  rates are not influenced by the removal of roots and other disturbance to the ecosystem. When the component parts of  $R_S$  (i.e., roots and bulk soil) are separated, uncontrolled factors, e.g. soil moisture, may influence the respiration processes and create artefacts. The disadvantage of isotopic methods is the complexity of the experimental setup and the difficulty and cost of analytical measurements since isotopic methods often involve the artificial labelling of plants with a tracer. To overcome the disadvantage of isotopic methods natural <sup>13</sup>C abundance techniques have been developed and Hanson et al. (2000)

have concluded that natural  $^{13}\text{C}$  abundance techniques will become an increasingly popular for determining  $R_{\text{OM}}$  and  $R_{\text{RD}}$ .

#### **2.2.4.1 Natural $^{13}\text{C}$ abundance technique**

There are two naturally occurring stable isotopes of C ( $^{12}\text{C}$  and  $^{13}\text{C}$ ) and the natural abundance of C in atmospheric  $\text{CO}_2$  is 1.1%. The ratio of  $^{13}\text{CO}_2$  to  $^{12}\text{CO}_2$  is used to generate a value termed ‘delta thirteen C’ ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  which is expressed as follows in units of ‰, pronounced “per mill” (eqn. 2.7).

$$\delta^{13}\text{C} = \left[ \frac{R(\text{sample})}{R(\text{standard})} - 1 \right] \times 1000 \quad (2.7)$$

where  $R$  is the ratio of  $^{13}\text{C}$  to  $^{12}\text{C}$  in the sample or standard. The  $R$  (standard) is an established reference for  $^{13}\text{C}$  and is called Pee Dee Belemnite (PDB) standard. The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  value of atmospheric  $\text{CO}_2$  recorded recently in 2009 was -8.28‰ based on the extended record derived from INSTAAR/NOAA  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  ( $\text{CO}_2$ ) discrete measurements at Mauna Loa (Tans, 2009). Plant materials have a different  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  value because enzymes involving in photosynthesis discriminate against  $^{13}\text{CO}_2$ . The mechanisms of the discrimination differ between  $\text{C}_3$  and  $\text{C}_4$  plants because different enzymes operate in  $\text{C}_3$  and  $\text{C}_4$  photosynthesis pathways (Bender, 1968). The  $\text{C}_3$  plants are generally temperate species which follow the Calvin cycle of photosynthesis. The  $\text{C}_4$  plants are tropical plants and they have a relatively more efficient enzyme to fix  $\text{CO}_2$  but the enzyme requires a relatively high temperature to efficiently operate. The name “ $\text{C}_4$ ” comes from the fact that they initially fix  $\text{CO}_2$  in four-carbon dicarboxylic acids (Kortschak et al., 1965).

The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  abundance values in  $\text{C}_3$  and  $\text{C}_4$  plant tissues range from -25 to -32‰ and -12 to -15‰, respectively (Boutton et al., 1999). Plant residues are the dominant source of soil organic matter in pasture soils. Hence, soil with a long-term vegetative cover of either  $\text{C}_3$  or  $\text{C}_4$  plants will have soil  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  abundances that reflect those of the respective  $\text{C}_3$  or  $\text{C}_4$  plant material grown (Schönwitzer et al., 1986). The difference between the  $\text{C}_3$  and  $\text{C}_4$  plants and soils can be utilised to discriminate soil  $\text{CO}_2$  flux sources. For example, if  $\text{C}_3$  plants are growing on a ‘ $\text{C}_4$  soil’, where soil organic matter has been produced, over time, from  $\text{C}_4$  plant organic matter, then it is possible to determine the  $\text{CO}_2$  flux source(s).

The fraction of  $\text{CO}_2$  derived from root-derived C ( $f_{\text{RD}}$ ) can be calculated using the following mass balance equation (eqn. 2.8; Lin et al., 1999):

$$f_{RD} = \frac{\delta^{13}C_{SOIL} - \delta^{13}C_{OM}}{\delta^{13}C_{ROOT} - \delta^{13}C_{OM}} \quad (2.8)$$

where the subscripts ‘SOIL’, ‘OM’, and ‘ROOT’ refer to the CO<sub>2</sub> respired from the soil surface (i.e.  $R_S$ ), the CO<sub>2</sub> respired from the background soil ( $R_{OM}$ ), and the CO<sub>2</sub> respired from the roots ( $R_{RD}$ ), respectively (Lin et al., 1999). Previous studies have successfully separated  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$  using this technique (Millard et al., 2008; Rochette et al., 1999). The method has been used to show that  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$  are influenced by season and soil moisture in a broad-leaved forest (Sakata et al., 2007). It has also been used in a boreal mixed coniferous forest where it was shown that weather conditions markedly influenced  $R_{RD}$  but not  $R_{OM}$  (Ekblad and Högberg, 2001). However, no previous studies have investigated the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$  in pastoral soils using the natural <sup>13</sup>C abundance technique.

## 2.3 Soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions

### 2.3.1 The importance of soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions

The concentration of N<sub>2</sub>O in the atmosphere has increased linearly by 0.26% yr<sup>-1</sup> for the period 1998 – 2005 and equalled 319 ± 0.21 µl l<sup>-1</sup> in 2005 (Forster et al., 2007). While uncertainty remains with respect to the total global sources of N<sub>2</sub>O, agriculture is believed to contribute about 80% of the anthropogenic emissions of N<sub>2</sub>O, and of this livestock production systems contribute about 30% of the emissions (Davidson and Mosier, 2004; Oenema et al., 2001). The total N<sub>2</sub>O emissions from animal production systems were estimated to be 1.5 Tg N in 2000 (Oenema et al., 2005). Agricultural sources of N<sub>2</sub>O include; synthetic fertilisers, animal excreta and crop residues (de Klein et al., 2001). Ruminant urine is considered to be an important source of N<sub>2</sub>O (Oenema et al., 1997). In New Zealand, ruminant urine is the largest potential source of anthropogenic N<sub>2</sub>O emissions accounting for about 50% of the total N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (de Klein et al., 2001), with N<sub>2</sub>O contributing 17% of New Zealand’s greenhouse gas emissions in 2007 (Petrie et al., 2007). The N<sub>2</sub>O molecule has a life time of approximately 114 years and has the warming potential of 298 times greater than that of CO<sub>2</sub> over a 100 year period (Forster et al., 2007). Currently N<sub>2</sub>O is also the dominant ozone-depleting substance and it is expected to remain so throughout the 21<sup>st</sup> century (Ravishankara et al., 2009).

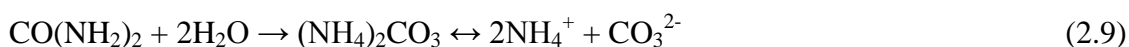
### 2.3.2 Processes of nitrous oxide production in pastoral soils

#### 2.3.2.1 Nitrification

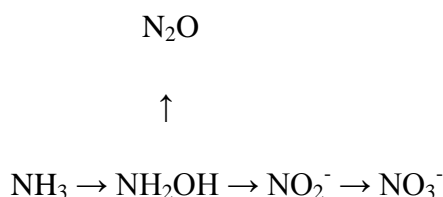
Ruminant urine is the major source of N<sub>2</sub>O emissions from grazed pastoral soils (de Klein et al., 2001). The major N component in urine is urea (CO(NH<sub>2</sub>)<sub>2</sub>) and it makes up 50 to 90% of the N contained in urine (Bussink and Oenema, 1998; Doak, 1952). Following the deposition



of urine onto soil, urea is rapidly hydrolyzed by the enzyme urease and ammonium ions ( $\text{NH}_4^+$ ) are formed (eqn. 2.9; Reynolds et al., 1985):



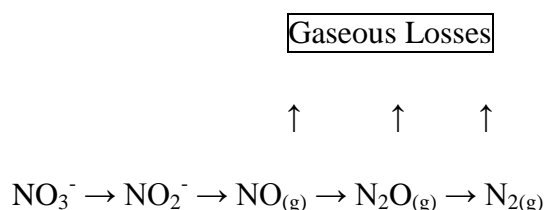
Nitrification is the oxidation of ammonia ( $\text{NH}_3$ ) to nitrate ( $\text{NO}_3^-$ ) (Figure 2.1) and it is performed by both bacteria and archaea (Leininger et al., 2006). Nitrification occurs in soils with relatively high  $\text{O}_2$  contents. Ammonia and  $\text{NO}_2^-$  are the electron donors in nitrification processes and the microbes obtain their C from  $\text{CO}_2$ , in a process called autotrophic nitrification (Wezermal and Gannon, 1967). Heterotrophic nitrification may also occur under acid conditions in pastoral soils (Islam et al., 2007). Nitrous oxide is produced during oxidation of  $\text{NH}_3$  and hydroxyamine ( $\text{NH}_2\text{OH}$ ) and in soils (Yoshida and Alexander, 1970), and occurs when the soil is well aerated (Blackmer and Bremner, 1977).



**Figure 2.1 Outline of the nitrification pathways (after Wrage et al., 2001).**

### **2.3.2.2 Denitrification**

Denitrification is the biological reduction of  $\text{NO}_3^-$  to  $\text{N}_2$  (Figure 2.2). The organisms involved in the denitrification processes are predominately heterotrophic microorganisms hence they utilise organic C substrates. The microbes involved in denitrification are facultative anaerobes which mean they can use both  $\text{O}_2$  and  $\text{NO}_3^-$  (or  $\text{NO}_2^-$ ) as the electron acceptors (John, 1977). Hence, the presence of  $\text{O}_2$  stops denitrification and denitrification occurs in soils under conditions of  $\text{O}_2$  depletion (Bremner and Shaw, 1958; Russow et al., 2009). Both NO and  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  are obligate intermediates of denitrification (Payne, 1973; Russow et al., 2009).



**Figure 2.2 Outline of the denitrification pathway (after Hoshstein and Tomlinson, 1988).**

### **2.3.2.3 Coupled nitrification-denitrification**

In soils, coupled nitrification-denitrification occurs where there are anaerobic-aerobic interfaces (Wrage et al., 2001). Nitrite ( $\text{NO}_2^-$ ) or  $\text{NO}_3^-$  produced during nitrification can be utilized by denitrifiers. Hence, coupled nitrification-denitrification occurs in soils where favourable conditions for both nitrification and denitrification are present (Figure 2.3). In terms of  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  production, coupled nitrification-denitrification can be very important. For example, Khdyer and Cho (1983) observed that in a forest soil,  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  following an addition of urea was mainly produced when the conditions were sub-optimal for both nitrifiers and denitrifiers, and they concluded that the coupled nitrification-denitrification was the main source of  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  when urea was applied on the surface of Wellwood soil samples at 20°C. When a cattle manure was applied to an aerobic soil, coupled nitrification-denitrification was again the predominant cause of N loss from the soil to the atmosphere (Nielsen and Revsbech, 1998).

### **2.3.2.4 Chemodenitrification**

Chemodenitrification is the abiotic chemical decomposition of  $\text{NO}_2^-$  with organic or inorganic compounds (Wrage et al., 2001). Chemodenitrification occurs in soils of low pH (< 5) (van Cleemput and Baert, 1984) and it has been reported to be a significant source of  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  when high concentrations of  $\text{NO}_3^-$  have accumulated (Anderson and Levine, 1986).

### **2.3.2.5 Nitrifier-denitrification**

Nitrifier-denitrification is performed only by nitrifiers, whereas nitrifiers and denitrifiers are involved in coupled nitrification-denitrification (Wrage et al., 2001). In nitrifier-denitrification, nitrifiers oxidize  $\text{NH}_3$  to  $\text{NO}_2^-$  then reduce the  $\text{NO}_2^-$  to  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  and  $\text{N}_2$  (Figure 2.3). Nitrifier-denitrification can be the predominant source of soil  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  fluxes when soil moisture contents are low (Webster and Hopkins, 1996). Using a dual-isotope labelling method ( $^{18}\text{O}$  and  $^{15}\text{N}$ ), Wrage et al. (2005) showed that nitrifier-denitrification contributed 37% of soil  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions 6 h following the addition of  $^{15}\text{N}$ -labelled ammonium nitrate to an arable soil. Russow et al. (2009) reported that nitrifier-denitrification occurred when soil

oxygen contents were between 2 to 5%. However, studies focusing on nitrifier-denitrification and soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes are sparse and further studies are required (Wrage et al., 2001).

Refer to Wrage et al. 2001

**Figure 2.3. The pathways for coupled nitrification-denitrification and nitrifier denitrification. The overlapping boxes symbolize the possibility of a coupling between nitrification and denitrification. In the proposed pathway of nitrifier-denitrification, NO<sub>2</sub><sup>-</sup> is reduced and NO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> is not formed (after Wrage et al., 2001).**

### 2.3.3 Factors controlling soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions

The factors controlling soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions are complicated due to the many processes involved. The following literature review discusses the impact of the major factors controlling soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions, namely, soil pH, substrate supply and availability, temperature, and soil moisture. In addition, the importance of urine deposition events with respect to soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions from pastoral ecosystems is discussed.

#### 2.3.3.1 Soil pH

Soil pH influences the rates of denitrification and the N<sub>2</sub>O:N<sub>2</sub> ratio (Focht and Verstraete, 1977). The optimum pH range for denitrification has been reported as being between pH 7.0 and 8.2 (Delwiche and Bryan, 1976). However, Šimek et al. (2002) have reported that there was no simple relationship between denitrifying enzyme activity and soil pH and that soil denitrifiers could adapt to soils at different pH. The N<sub>2</sub>O:N<sub>2</sub> ratio decreases as soil pH increases (Hauck and Melstead, 1956). During nitrification, an increase in soil pH generally increases nitrification activity but the optimum pH has varied from 3.0 to 9.5 and depends on the ecosystem (Kyveryga et al., 2004; Ste-Marie and Paré, 1999). In a pastoral ecosystem, the effect of soil pH on N<sub>2</sub>O emissions is influenced by soil moisture contents, for example, Clough et al. (2004) reported that under saturated soil conditions, soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions from a

urine patch increased with soil pH between pH 4.7 to 6.6 but when soil moisture contents were at the field capacity, soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions decreased with increasing soil pH.

#### **2.3.3.2 Substrate supply and availability**

For the heterotrophic microbes involved in N<sub>2</sub>O production, organic material acts both as a C source and as a hydrogen donor. Hence, N<sub>2</sub>O production is normally greatly enhanced upon the addition of soil organic C. For example, the addition of glucose markedly enhances the denitrification rate in soils under anaerobic condition (Azam et al., 2002; Jacobson and Alexander, 1980). Bailey (1976) reported that, in pastoral ecosystems, readily available organic C is supplied from plant roots and that the presence of roots increased denitrification rates. Conversely, Sauer et al. (2009) concluded that soil inorganic N uptake by plants during the winter-spring period reduced N<sub>2</sub>O emissions from a pasture soil. Thus, studies focusing on the effects of plants on soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions show contradicting results. Burford and Bremner (1975) published a classic study that demonstrated there was a very strong ( $r = 0.99$ ) linear relationship between denitrification rate and the soil's water-soluble C content when there was enough NO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> present. Hence, factors that affect the magnitude and quality of the soil's various C pools (e.g. plant activity) also have the potential to control the C substrate supply available for heterotrophic induced N<sub>2</sub>O emissions.

#### **2.3.3.3 Temperature**

The mechanisms controlling the effect of temperature on soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions are complex because multiple processes are responsible for soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (Li et al., 1992). The optimum temperature for nitrification has been reported to be 35°C (Hadas et al., 1986) whereas for denitrification, the optimum may be as high as 65°C (Bremner and Shaw, 1958). However, soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions may not always respond positively to temperature. For example, Göttsche and Conrad (1999) demonstrated that soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions can be greater at a low temperature (4°C) compared to a higher temperature (15°C) and their study concluded that soil microbes are able to adapt to low temperatures. The N<sub>2</sub>O:N<sub>2</sub> ratio was shown to decrease with increasing temperature probably due to increasing denitrification rates at higher temperatures (Avalakki et al., 1995; Maag and Vinther, 1996). Conversely, Firestone (1982) reported that N<sub>2</sub>O produced via denitrification could be enhanced relative to the other products at low temperatures. Temperature may indirectly influence soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions, for example, a  $T_s$  increase may increase  $R_s$ , causing O<sub>2</sub> concentration to decrease, thus creating favourable denitrification conditions and increasing denitrification (Parkin and Tiedje, 1984). Soil microbial populations or community structures may also influence the responses of soil N<sub>2</sub>O production mechanisms to temperature because N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes in soils sampled at the same

site, but in different seasons, have been shown to respond differently to soil temperature changes (Struwe and Kjølner, 1991).

#### **2.3.3.4 Soil moisture**

Soil moisture has a strong influence on soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions, since it controls the degree of aeration (Smith et al., 2003). When soil moisture contents are high, air permeability declines, reducing soil aeration, and denitrification is promoted under the low O<sub>2</sub> conditions (Grable, 1971). Generally the higher the soil moisture content, the more N<sub>2</sub>O is emitted from soils because microbial activity is limited in dry soils (Weitz et al., 2001). Also, high N<sub>2</sub>O emissions are commonly observed during a sudden and large change in soil moisture (Müller et al., 1997). However, when soils are completely saturated or are under completely anaerobic conditions, N<sub>2</sub>O may further be reduced to N<sub>2</sub> via denitrification (Letey et al., 1980). Hence, soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions may peak at soil water-filled pore space (WFPS) values of 75% to 90% (Khalil and Baggs, 2005; Klemetsson et al., 1988). Nitrous oxide production by nitrifiers is also affected by soil moisture. For example, Skopp et al. (1990) found that the optimal soil water content for nitrification was 60% WFPS. The effect of soil moisture on soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions may also vary according to soil structure and texture. Chalamat (1985) reported that the number of anaerobic sites was higher in fine structured soils. Hence, an increase in soil moisture content may have a more significant effect in fine textured soils if N<sub>2</sub>O emissions are from denitrification. A sudden change in soil moisture, due to drying-wetting cycles, has an effect on soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions because a sudden wetting can solubilize soil C, feeding heterotrophic microbes (Rudaz et al., 1991).

#### **2.3.3.5 The interaction between soil moisture and temperature**

The temperature response of soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions is reported to be influenced by soil moisture (Schindlbacher et al., 2004). A review of soil N<sub>2</sub>O emission data, defined as an emission factor (EF), for grassland systems across Europe, showed that the percentage of N<sub>2</sub>O-N produced per unit of fertiliser N added, increased markedly with an increase in  $T_s$ , but only when WFPS was between 60 and 90% (Flechard et al., 2007). In Figure 2.4, it can be seen that EF values of up to 6.5% were predicted for a soil temperature at 25°C and a WFPS of between 70% and 80%, whereas at the same temperature and at a WFPS below 50% and above 90%, EF values of < 1% were predicted (Flechard et al., 2007). At lower  $T_s$ , changes in soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions with changes in soil moisture are reported to be relatively small (Maag and Vinther, 1996).

Refer to Flechard et al. 2007

**Figure 2.4 The modelled response of the emission factor (EF) from fertilizer to soil temperature and WFPS (after Flechard et al., 2007).**

Hence, soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions can occur at high temperatures (~ 25°C) and high soil moisture contents but in practice, such optimum conditions seldom occur in pastoral systems and soil moisture contents are generally lower when temperatures are higher (McKenzie et al., 1999). A field study performed in a pastoral system in Switzerland has concluded that soil water content was the main factor controlling soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (Rudaz et al., 1999). Despite this the rewetting of dry soil may also cause a marked increase in soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions as demonstrated during an incubation study at a constant  $T_S$  of 14°C, hence the interaction between soil moisture and temperature is a critical determinant of soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (Ruser et al., 2006).

#### **2.3.3.6 Urine deposition**

In pastoral ecosystems, urine-N is the single most important source of soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (de Klein et al., 2001). A brief description of soil N transformation processes which occur following the application of urine were described earlier (section 2.3.2). A portion of the N contained in the ingested pasture is returned to the soils as urine-N from the grazing animals. This N is predominantly in the form of urea. The urine-N is not evenly distributed onto the pasture but deposited in small concentrated patches, termed urine patches. The concentration of N under a urine patch can be as high as 1000 kg N ha<sup>-1</sup> (Haynes and Williams, 1993). A previous study has estimated that between 0.1 and 3.8% of ruminant urine-N is emitted to the atmosphere as N<sub>2</sub>O (Oenema et al., 1997).

The mineralization of soil organic N also increases under the soils treated with urine. The increase in the N mineralisation may occur due to an increase in microbial activity under the urine patch (Zaman et al., 1999). The increased plant activity under a urine patch, a consequence of the fertiliser effect of the urine constituents, may also lead to the higher rates of N mineralisation (Thompson and Fillery, 1997).

As noted above (section 2.2.3.5) the application of urine to soils leads to a rapid increase in soil pH due to the hydrolysis of urea (Doak, 1952). The increase in soil pH increases the solubility of soil organic C (Monaghan and Barraclough, 1993). In addition, C substrates can increase in urine-treated soils due to the root scorching events (Carter et al., 2006). Shand et al. (2002) observed in a field experiment that the increase of soil pH after the application of sheep urine on pasture was followed by an increase of dissolved organic C in the soil. Hence, urine provides both N and C substrates for subsequent nitrification and denitrification processes. Nitrous oxide is produced through both nitrification and denitrification and following a urine application, denitrification may be the main N<sub>2</sub>O producing process, however, this depends greatly on soil water content (van Groenigen et al., 2005).

#### **2.3.4 Methods to investigate the factors controlling soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions in pasture soils**

##### **2.3.4.1 Nitrogen isotope technique**

To investigate the N<sub>2</sub>O source following urine-N deposition, a <sup>15</sup>N isotope technique has commonly been used (Wachendorf et al., 2008). For example, Clough et al. (2004) studied the fate of <sup>15</sup>N-labelled urea mixed with synthetic urine applied to a pasture soil (500 kg N ha<sup>-1</sup>). Over a 85 d incubation period following urine-N addition, < 0.1 to 1.7% of <sup>15</sup>N applied was recovered as N<sub>2</sub>O-N. Clough et al. (2004) investigated the effects of soil pH and soil moisture contents on soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions and the <sup>15</sup>N isotope technique successfully allowed the treatment effects on soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions to be quantified. Bronson et al. (1999) also showed, using a <sup>15</sup>N labelled urine, that the short-term N dynamics under urine patches could be studied using a <sup>15</sup>N isotope technique. Bronson et al. (1999) concluded that following urine addition to a soil with plant litter on its surface, the major loss of urine-N due to NH<sub>3</sub> volatilization with negligible losses of N<sub>2</sub>O from urine-N. The <sup>15</sup>N isotope technique is a standard technique used to investigate N transformations under urine patches.

## **2.4 Global warming and the pastoral ecosystem**

The IPCC reported that global mean surface temperatures have risen by 0.13 ± 0.03°C per decade over the last 50 years (Trenberth, 2007) and it has been shown that *NPP* responds on a

global basis to small changes in temperature e.g. a drop of 0.5°C as a result of the Mount Pinatubo volcano eruption in 1991 decreased the *NPP* of the global boreal zone by 25 g C m<sup>-2</sup> yr<sup>-1</sup> in 1992 (Lucht et al., 2002). Understanding the effect of temperature on soil processes is critically important for predicting the responses of the pastoral ecosystem to global warming in terms of the role temperature will play in mediating either positive or negative feedbacks on *R<sub>s</sub>* (Cox et al., 2000; Luo et al., 2001; Melillo et al., 2002) and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (Smith, 1997). In this section, recent literature is reviewed with respect to the current trends and predictions for global warming, in order to provide an overview of the complex relationships between global warming and soil processes in pastoral ecosystems.

#### **2.4.1 Changes in global mean atmospheric temperature**

The Fourth Assessment report (AR4) of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (IPCC, 2007b) states that over the last 100 years, the global mean surface temperatures have risen 0.74 ± 0.18°C (Fig. 2.5) and this is unequivocally attributed to anthropogenic activity. Future climate scenarios have been assessed and a warming of 0.2°C per decade is projected. However, if the atmospheric concentrations of greenhouse gases continue to increase at the current rate then average global surface temperature by 2090 to 2099 are predicted to increase by as much as 4.0°C (range of 2.4°C to 6.4°C) compared to the period 1980-1999 (Meehl et al., 2007).

Refer to IPCC AR4 report 2007

**Figure 2.5 Observed changes in global average surface temperature based on the global average surface temperature in 1990. The shaded areas are the uncertainty intervals estimated from a comprehensive analysis of known uncertainties (after IPCC, 2007b).**



For New Zealand, the predicted changes in climate, resulting from global warming, are predicted to vary with geographical region (Christensen, 2007) with the mean surface temperature increases for New Zealand predicted to be 0.9°C by 2040 and 2.1°C by 2090. New Zealand's Ministry for the Environment (2008) has stated that this predicted increase in temperature, along with other possible changes in climate, may change the frequency and intensity of existing risks and hazards, but may also bring opportunities in agricultural sectors (e.g. the potential to grow new crops).

## **2.4.2 Potential effects of global warming on soil processes in pastoral ecosystems**

### **2.4.2.1 Potential effects of global warming on soil respiration**

In pastoral ecosystems, almost every aspect of the soil-plant continuum, for example, plant growth, soil microbial activity, and soil moisture characteristics have been shown to be affected by changes in soil and atmospheric temperature (Thornley and Cannell, 1997). The study by Thornley and Cannell (1997) analysed the effects of increasing both annual mean atmospheric and  $T_S$  by 5°C, where the 5°C increase in atmospheric and  $T_S$  represented an extreme in order to demonstrate the response of soil processes. As noted above (section 2.2.3.2)  $R_S$  is very sensitive to  $T_S$  hence, it is considered likely that global warming will increase  $R_S$  but uncertainty remains high with respect to the magnitude of any changes in  $R_S$  as a result of global warming (Rustad et al., 2000).

A small change in  $R_S$  could potentially have a significant impact on atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations because on a global scale, terrestrial ecosystems, including vegetation and soils, are one of the main reservoirs of C on Earth, containing 2200 Gt C, or approximately three times the C in the atmosphere (Schimel, 1995). Hence a small increase in the rate of  $R_S$  as a consequence of global warming, could have a significant impact on atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentration, if all other factors remained the same.

### **2.4.2.2 Acceleration in carbon loss from soil and soil carbon cycle feedback**

Global warming can potentially increase C loss from soil to atmosphere due to enhanced  $R_S$  and this phenomenon could further accelerate global warming (Cox et al. 2000), resulting in a positive feedback. Global warming directly influences factors controlling  $R_S$  such as soil microbial community function via processes such as soil enzyme activity (shown as a 'direct feedback' in Fig. 2.6). Further indirect effects occur as secondary processes. For example, elevated temperatures may enhance  $NPP$  and rhizodeposition (Fig. 2.6). The increase in  $NPP$  increases root-derived C substrate supply for  $R_{RD}$ , and  $R_{RD}$  can prime  $R_{OM}$ . The relationship between  $NPP$  and  $R_S$  is stronger in grassland compared to forest sites, possibly because there

is no allocation of C to wood production in grasslands, thus grasses may have more photosynthate available for  $R_s$  (Raich and Tufekciogul, 2000). It was reported that in long-term pasture ecosystems, losses from respiration exceeded the inputs from photosynthate and resulted in a long term (17 – 30 years) C loss from soils (Schipper et al., 2007). Hence, the better understanding of the relationship between C substrates and respiration in grassland ecosystems is critical to accurately predict the effect of global warming on soil C in grassland ecosystems. Bardgett et al. (2008) have concluded that the consideration of both direct and indirect impacts of global warming on soil microbes and  $R_s$  processes is critical in order to make progress in understanding the soil C cycle feedback.

There are considerable gaps in our understanding of belowground processes (e.g.  $R_s$ ) when compared to our knowledge of aboveground processes (e.g. photosynthesis) (Pendall et al., 2008). However, the issue is complicated further by the knowledge that aboveground and belowground processes strongly interact (Bardgett et al., 2008). For example, actively growing plants are reported to enhance or suppress  $R_{OM}$  (Kuzyakov et al., 2000). Soil microbes are also reported to determine plant community and productivity (Wardle et al., 2004). Hence, there is an urgent need for greater understanding of how  $R_s$  directly and indirectly responds to global warming.

Refer to Bardgett et al. 2008

**Figure 2.6 Direct and indirect effects of climate change on soil microbial communities and routes of feedback to global warming through soil respiration ( $R_s$ ) (After Bardgett et al. 2008).**

### **2.4.2.3 Potential effects of global warming on soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions**

As noted above, N<sub>2</sub>O production from soils is positively correlated to  $T_s$  (section 2.3.3.3) hence, a positive feedback in response to global warming is predicted for soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (Smith, 1997). A mathematical model, the Denitrification-Decomposition (DNDC) model (Li et al., 1992), has predicted that in a maize field under a humid climate, soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions are very sensitive to  $T_s$ , and annual N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes will increase by 13% if annual mean  $T_s$  increases by 1°C (Li et al., 1996). The increase in soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions may be partially due to increased enzymatic activity during N<sub>2</sub>O production and the increased release of soil N due to enhanced mineralisation (Lükewille and Wright, 1997). The model (Li et al., 1992) also predicted an increase in mineralisation when  $T_s$  increased. The increase in mineralisation of N and  $T_s$  may also increase *NPP* (Rustad et al., 2001), leading to increased root exudation and C inputs into the soil which may further increase soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (Song and Zhang, 2009).

In complete contrast, using another mathematical model for soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (Carnegie-Ames-Stanford or CASA model), Potter et al. (1996) have concluded that a 20% increase in  $T_s$  was likely to reduce soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions by between 1 to 21% in many different types of ecosystems including pastoral ecosystems because reduced soil moisture contents and increased plant N uptake, influenced by the increase in  $T_s$ , will negatively influence soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions. Similar to Potter et al. (1996), Hantschel et al. (1995) conducted a soil warming experiment (+ 3°C  $T_s$ ) and showed that soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions from a cropping farm over a 3-month winter period decreased as a result of soil warming.

Further investigation of the factors controlling soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions is therefore critical since 70% of global N<sub>2</sub>O emissions originate from soils (Conrad, 1996). New Zealand's agricultural greenhouse gas inventory has a significant soil derived N<sub>2</sub>O component, as discussed above (section 2.3.3.3), hence a small change in  $T_s$  could have a marked effect on soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions and New Zealand's agricultural greenhouse gas inventory.

## **2.5 Recommendation for research**

A very complex interaction of soil/plant/animal processes and environmental factors controls  $R_s$  and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions. These complex interactions need to be investigated to improve our knowledge of the temperature response of  $R_s$  and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions.

Firstly the influence of readily available C supply on the relationship between  $T_s$  and  $R_s$  must be studied. Soils contain a small amount of readily available C substrates, which deplete within days without plants, and a large amount of less available or non available C substrates. It is known that soil microbes preferably utilise readily available C substrates but they also

slowly utilise less available C substrates. However, uncertainty remains high with respect to microbes ability to decompose less available C at different  $T_S$ .

To further improve our understanding of the interaction between plants and readily available C substrate supply to soils, further studies on  $R_S$  substrates are critically important. Current models for the temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$  fail to accurately describe the relationship between  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$  (Zobitz et al., 2008). The relationship between  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$  at different  $T_S$  needs to be studied using stable isotope techniques. The predicted acceleration of C loss from soils due to global warming (section 2.4.2.2) is strongly related to  $R_{OM}$  whereas  $R_{RD}$  may indirectly be related to the acceleration of soil C loss because plant activity can also increase  $R_{OM}$  (priming effect). It is unclear how soil nutrient availability affects the priming effect and the temperature response of  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$ . This needs to be examined.

In pastoral ecosystems, the high concentration of N deposited in ruminant urine patches increases both plant production and readily available C substrate supply to soils resulting in high soil  $CO_2$  and  $N_2O$  fluxes. Because of an increase in soil pH, which solubilises soil organic matter and the high N loading under urine patches, the factors controlling the temperature response of soil  $CO_2$  and  $N_2O$  fluxes from urine patches could be different when compared to other ecosystems (e.g. forests). Thus, studies of soil  $CO_2$  and  $N_2O$  fluxes from urine patches at varying  $T_S$  are needed to increase our knowledge of the pastoral ecosystem's response to potential increases in global mean surface temperatures.

# Chapter 3

## Soil microbial respiration responses to changing temperature and substrate availability in fertile grassland

*A manuscript from this study has been accepted for publication in the Australian Journal of Soil Research: Uchida, Y., Clough, T.J., Kelliher, F.M., and Sherlock, R.R. Soil microbial respiration responses to changing temperature and substrate availability in fertile grassland. This is referred to in later chapters as Uchida et al. (2010).*

### 3.1 Abstract

A relationship between soil respiration rate ( $R_S$ ) and temperature ( $T_S$ ), has been understood to be predicated on carbon (C) substrate availability. However, unlike  $T_S$ , C availability in soils is not a state variable that can be readily measured. The C in soils has come from plants, so the C supply rate can be affected by the weather and nutrient supply. I studied a fertile soil beneath pasture, measuring  $R_S$  across a range of temperate-climate  $T_S$  values. The objectives for the study were to: (1) quantify the synchrony of diurnal changes in  $T_S$  and  $R_S$  beneath pasture under conditions favourable for plants, (2) quantify responses of microbial respiration ( $R_M$ ) to the removal of plants and depletion of C supply over time at various  $T_S$  and (3) determine if  $R_M$  was related to water (20°C) soluble (WSC) and hot-water (80°C) soluble C (HWSC) contents of the soil. At a grassland site,  $R_S$  increased with  $T_S$  as predicted by an Arrhenius type relationship. Sampled soil was incubated at 3°, 9° and 24°C and  $R_M$  was measured over 14 d. In addition soil samples were pre-incubated at 3° or 9°C for both 5 and 14 d, then incubated at 24°C for 1 d and  $R_M$  was measured. On day 2,  $R_M$  was less than predicted at 24° and 9°C, respectively, suggesting a C availability limitation. The time courses of  $R_M$ , revealed that at 24°C,  $R_M$  utilised C that was not utilised at lower  $T_S$ , indicating that evidently recalcitrant C was available to microbes at a warmer temperature. The responses of  $R_M$  at 24°C after the pre-incubation treatments were identical for the 3°C and 9°C pre-incubation treatments although significantly more C was respired during pre-incubation at 9°C. The WSC and HWSC contents were unaffected by  $T_S$  and did not provide useful measures of the C substrate available for  $R_M$ .

### 3.2 Introduction

In soils, the relationship between microbial respiration ( $R_M$ ) and temperature ( $T_S$ ) is of heightened interest (e.g. Cox et al., 2000). The mean global surface temperature has been predicted to increase by 2.4° to 6.4°C over the next 90 years (Meehl et al., 2007). Microbial respiration can be very sensitive to  $T_S$  and soils contain a large reservoir of C (approximately 1500 Gt C - Amundson, 2001). Thus warmer soils could accelerate the rate of increase in the atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentration and further induce global warming (Amundson, 2001; Davidson and Janssens, 2006; Kirschbaum, 1995). According to Lloyd and Taylor (1994), a 1°C increase in  $T_S$  may increase  $R_M$  by 10% at 10°C. The effect of a 1°C increase in  $T_S$  on  $R_M$  varies inversely to  $T_S$ ; hence  $R_M$  is more temperature sensitive at lower  $T_S$ .

Soil microbial respiration ( $R_M$ ) utilises C substrates of varying availabilities. Low molecular weight C substances such as sugars and organic acids are more readily utilised by microbes, so called 'readily available C substrates' (Sikora and McCoy, 1990; Townsend et al., 1997). Their residence time in soils can be measured in terms of days (Domanski et al., 2001). Soils also contain C substrates that are either not available or less readily available to microbes because they are physically and/or chemically protected. Their residence time in soil can be > 1500 yr (Parton et al., 1987) and these protected C substrates have been called 'recalcitrant C substrates' (Rovira and Vallejo, 2002; Six et al., 2002). The recalcitrant C substrate fraction in a soil is normally much larger than the readily available C substrate fraction because soil microbes preferably consume readily available C substrates at faster rates (Koeppf, 1953; Townsend et al., 1997).

The rate of readily available C substrate supply is related to plant photosynthesis and growth. The relationship can be expressed as;

$$NPP = GPP (1 - \phi) \quad \text{eqn. 3.1}$$

where  $NPP$ ,  $GPP$ ,  $\phi$  are net primary production, the average rate of photosynthesis, and the proportion of assimilated C lost through plant respiration as well as other processes such as exudation of readily available C substrate from plants to soil, respectively (Lloyd and Farquhar, 2008). The study of Lloyd and Farquhar (2008) has reported that the parameter  $\phi$  was relatively constant. Hence, I can infer that soil fertility, which strongly controls  $NPP$ , also affects readily available C substrate supply to soils. The C assimilated by pastoral plants can

be made available for  $R_M$  within 24 h and the turnover of recently assimilated C was estimated to have been completed in 3 – 4 d according to Butler et al. (Butler et al., 2004). Saggar and Hedley (2001) also reported that within 4 h of pulse  $^{14}\text{C}$  application, 7 – 12% of the  $^{14}\text{C}$  was detected in roots. Hence soil fertility, influences readily available C supply to soils from plants, and  $R_M$  can be strongly correlated on a short-term basis.

The decomposition of recalcitrant C substrates is not normally limited by substrate supply from plants. Soil microbes consume recalcitrant C substrates at much slower rates (van Hees et al., 2005). Hence,  $R_M$  can be limited during microbially favourable temperature conditions if the readily available C substrate supply is exhausted and soil microbes have only recalcitrant C substrates to obtain their energy. This is called substrate limitation (Kirschbaum, 2006). The response of  $R_M$  to  $T_S$  can be suppressed by substrate limitation (Hartley et al., 2008). It should be noted that the predicted increase in mean global temperature does not occur in isolation, but that it is predicated on the increasing concentration of atmospheric  $\text{CO}_2$ . This may confound the relationship between  $R_M$  and  $T_S$ . In fact a meta-analysis of 117 free air carbon dioxide enrichment (FACE) and open top chamber studies by de Graaff et al. (2006) reported soil respiration increased by 17.7% although the C dynamics were highly dependant on soil nutrient supply. Experiments performed in a grazed pasture FACE facility located in a New Zealand grazed temperate grassland showed that while root growth and root turnover rates increased under elevated  $\text{CO}_2$  (Allard et al., 2005) the uncertainty of the effect of increased atmospheric  $\text{CO}_2$  concentration on microbial activity in a grazed temperate grassland remained high (Allard et al., 2006; Allard et al., 2005). It has also been suggested that substrate limitation will become more common in soils if global temperatures increase, as soil microbes are forced to utilise more recalcitrant C substrates because an increase in  $T_S$  may cause a greater increase in  $R_M$  compared with the increase of C inputs to soils from plants, although this may depend on soil types and substrate availability (Christensen et al., 1999; de Graaff et al., 2006; Piao et al., 2008).

Hence more studies are required to investigate the relationship between C substrate limitation and the response of  $R_M$  to  $T_S$  (Kirschbaum 2006). Carbon substrate availability has received the least attention as a controller of  $R_M$ , probably because it is very difficult to measure (Davidson et al., 2006). Simple and commonly reported methods for estimating readily available C substrates include water soluble C (WSC) and hot-water soluble C (HWSC) analyses. These have been used as indicators of substrate availability in soils (Davidson et al., 1987; Ghani et al., 2003; Haynes, 2000). Grazing intensity, land use types, denitrification activity, root activity and microbial biomass C have been shown to be closely related to WSC

or HWSC in previous studies (Burford and Bremner, 1975; Cheng, 1996; Ghani et al., 2003; Sparling et al., 1998). Microbial availability and molecular weights of substances in WSC are influenced by land use, management and sampling depth of the soil profile (Boyer and Groffman, 1996; Jandl and Sollins, 1997). Kelliher et al. (2005b) concluded that  $R_M$  was not proportional to WSC at constant  $T_S$ . However, the relationships between WSC, HWSC, and short-term changes in  $R_M$  at varying temperatures remain uncertain.

The first objective of this study was to measure the response of total soil respiration ( $R_S$ ) to  $T_S$  at a grassland site. This recognized that the most rapid and largest predicted changes in  $T_S$  can also happen within a daily timeframe. The second objective was to change  $T_S$  of the sieved soil and measure the response of  $R_M$  without plants. The third objective was to change  $T_S$  and the quantity of C available to the microbial community and measure the response of  $R_M$ , while the fourth object was to determine if  $R_M$  responded to changes in WSC and HWSC that have been proposed to indicate available C in soils. I hypothesised that at higher temperatures, readily available C in a pasture soil would be depleted more rapidly by  $R_M$  and that this would be indicated by the WSC and HWSC measurements.

### **3.3 Materials and Methods**

#### **3.3.1 Field measurements of soil respiration rates**

To measure the response of  $R_S$  to changing  $T_S$  an irrigated and regularly fertilised grassland site, producing in excess of 18 tonnes ha<sup>-1</sup> of herbage dry matter yr<sup>-1</sup>, at Lincoln, New Zealand (43° 39'S, 172° 29'E, 8 masl) was selected. The soil is a poorly drained Temuka silt loam (Soil Survey Staff, 1998). In this study, the term  $R_S$  includes root and microbial respiration. Soil microbial respiration, which was measured from sieved soils (0 – 50 mm depth) without plants, was termed  $R_M$  (see below). I measured  $R_S$  at the field site at intervals over 16 h during a sunny day in autumn (3<sup>rd</sup> April 2009). Sunrise and sunset on the day were at 7:40 a.m. and at 7:08 p.m., New Zealand Standard Time (NZST), respectively. It was assumed that  $T_S$  and  $R_S$  would change in synchrony over the day indicating no substrate limitation of  $R_S$  because the grass would supply C substrates to soils as required. The soil was well-watered, with measurements conducted one day after rain. The soil's water-filled pore space (WFPS) was  $59 \pm 6\%$  and the bulk density (0 – 5 cm depth) was  $980 \pm 80 \text{ kg m}^{-3}$  ( $\pm$  SEM,  $n = 3$ ). To measure  $R_S$ , 5 PVC collars (5 cm depth and 10 cm in diameter) were inserted 24 h beforehand with vegetation clipped. A portable chamber with an infrared gas analyser (SRC-1 and EGM-1, PP Systems, Hitchin, UK) was used to measure  $R_S$ . At a depth of 1 cm,  $T_S$  was



continuously measured with a thermocouple probe and data logged using a HOBO data logger (Onset Computer Co.).

To quantify the response of  $R_S$  to changes in  $T_S$  the model developed by Lloyd and Taylor (1994) (eqn. 3.2) was used. The parameter  $R_{10}$  is the respiration rate at 10°C,  $T_S$  is expressed in Kelvin (K), and 308.56 (K) is a parameter analogous to the activation energy derived from the soils data analysed by Lloyd and Taylor.  $R_x$  is either  $R_S$  or  $R_M$  (the latter measured in laboratory experiments described below). This equation yields a decreasing response of  $R_x$  to changing  $T_S$ . The model may be written following ‘eqn 11’ of Lloyd and Taylor’s paper (1994).

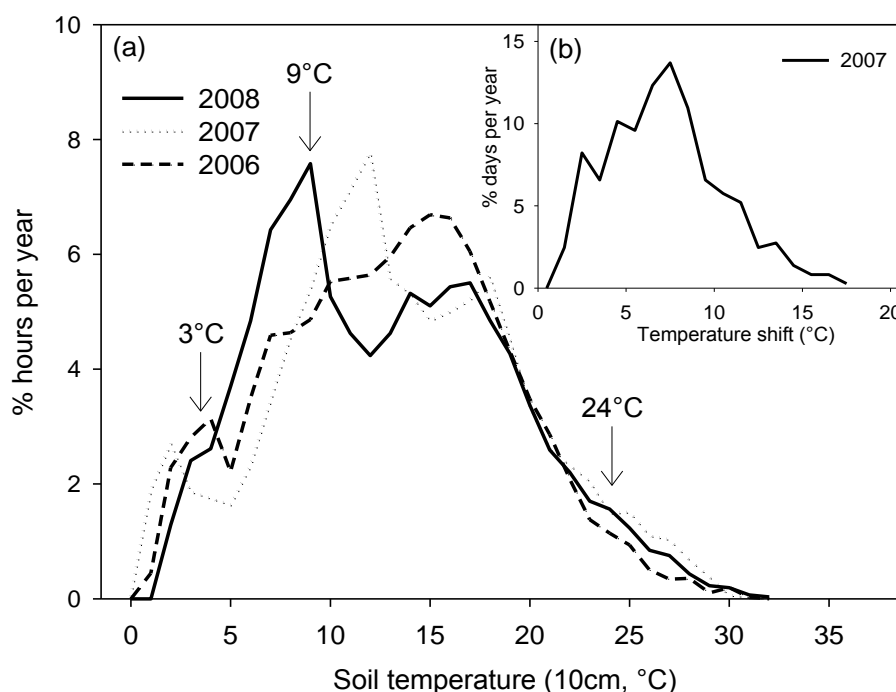
$$R_x = R_{10} e^{308.56 \left( \frac{1}{56.02} - \frac{1}{T_s - 227.13} \right)} \quad \text{eqn. 3.2}$$

### 3.3.2 Preparation of soil for laboratory experiments

Soil samples (0 – 5 cm depth) were collected from a local dairy farm at Lincoln, New Zealand in early autumn 2009. The soil is a poorly drained Temuka silt loam (Soil Survey Staff, 1998). At sampling, the vegetation was principally perennial ryegrass (*Lolium perenne* L.) and white clover (*Trifolium repens* L.). Chemical tests showed the soil to have a pH, organic matter, total C, and total N contents of 5.9, 15.5%, 9.0%, and 0.90%, respectively. At sampling the soil moisture content was 64% (WFPS). The pasture was grazed by dairy cattle every 21 – 28 d. Sample processing included the removal of roots and litter by hand and passage through a 5.6 mm mesh sieve. The sieved soil was packed to a depth of 5 cm into PVC containers (6 cm deep and 10 cm in diameter) and water was added to bring the soil moisture content up to 0.54 g H<sub>2</sub>O g<sup>-1</sup> dry soil (66% water-filled pore space), an optimum level for  $R_M$  (Howard and Howard, 1993; Rey et al., 2005). The soil had been sieved and placed in the PVC containers within 4 h of sampling to minimize the loss of readily available C substrate during processing. The containers were maintained at the same moisture content throughout the experiment by daily spraying water onto the soil surface. This was achieved by maintaining the weight of soil plus PVC containers, at the beginning of the experiment, during the whole incubation period.

### 3.3.3 Incubation procedure and soil respiration rate measurements

To measure the responses of  $R_M$  over time at varying  $T_S$  without plant C inputs, the soil samples were separated into three groups of eight cores and incubated, in temperature-controlled incubators, at either 3°C ( $3.23 \pm 0.39^\circ\text{C}$ ), 9°C ( $9.05 \pm 0.05^\circ\text{C}$ ), or 24°C ( $24.2 \pm 0.15^\circ\text{C}$ ) ( $\pm$  SEM). The  $T_S$  shown in brackets was the mean of measured values from randomly chosen soil containers, every other day. The chosen temperature treatments were based on an hourly  $T_S$  (10 cm depth) frequency distribution over years 2006 – 2008 measured beneath grass that was mown regularly at a weather station near the soil sampling site (Fig. 3.1a). On average, the hourly  $T_S$  changed  $7.2 \pm 3.3^\circ\text{C}$  ( $\pm$  standard deviation) within a day. The daily  $T_S$  range varied from zero to 15°C (Fig. 3.1b).



**Figure 3.1 (a) Hourly average soil temperature (10 cm depth) frequency distributions for years 2006 - 2008 at Lincoln, New Zealand, beneath mown grass. The arrows are the three treatment temperatures in the laboratory study. (b) Frequency distribution of daily temperature range during year 2007 calculated using the hourly measurements. These data were obtained from New Zealand's National Climate Database ([cliflo.niwa.co.nz](http://cliflo.niwa.co.nz)).**

The first measurement of  $R_M$  was started within 24 h following the start of the incubation so that the microbial activity associated with the decomposition of readily available C substrates could be evaluated (Feng and Simpson, 2009). The  $R_M$  was measured at 24, 48, 72, 96, 120, 144, 192, and 336 h following the start of the incubation. A portable chamber with an infrared

gas analyser was used to measure  $R_M$  as described above. Values for  $R_M$  are expressed as a mass of  $\text{CO}_2$  ( $\mu\text{g CO}_2$ ) per unit mass of contained soil ( $\text{kg}^{-1}$ ) per unit time ( $\text{s}^{-1}$ ). I hypothesised that  $R_M$  would decrease over time as readily available C substrates in the soil samples decreased. To quantify the decrease in  $R_M$  over time a model (eqn. 3.3) was fitted to the data with three parameters ( $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $r$ ).

$$R_m = a + br^t \quad \text{eqn. 3.3}$$

An asymptote was determined by parameter  $a$  ( $\mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$ ),  $b$  was a scaling factor, and  $t$  was time (h) following the start of the incubation. The parameter  $r$  is a decay factor and the exponential time constant (see below) is related to  $r$ . I chose this model since this has been successfully used to describe the changes in  $R_M$  over time during laboratory incubation (Kelliher et al., 2005b; Paul et al., 1999). The parameters were fitted using a non-linear least squares method, the errors for the parameters were calculated based on the sum of squared residuals, with the assumption that the errors were normally distributed. Statistics were performed using GENSTAT (Release 11, Lawes Agricultural Trust, Rothamsted, UK). The areas below the fitted curves for each treatment temperature were determined by integration to estimate the amount of  $\text{CO}_2$ -C lost to the atmosphere during the incubation period.

To further investigate the differences in the parameters for eqn. 3.3 time constants were estimated for the decreases in  $R_M$ . A time constant is a period (h) over which a variable ( $R_M$ ) would have decayed to an asymptote if the initial rate of decay (the initial slope) had continued. The time constants were obtained by using the parameter  $a$  as an asymptote and calculating a 63% step change based on the change from the first  $R_M$  measurement (at 24 h) to the asymptote.

### 3.3.4 Effects of pre-incubating temperature on soil respiration rate

An additional sixteen soil cores were prepared, and were separated into two groups of eight cores. These groups were pre-incubated at either  $3^\circ$  or  $9^\circ\text{C}$ . The experimental design for this part of the experiment was a completely randomized block with four replicates. After 72 h in the incubators at either  $3^\circ$  or  $9^\circ\text{C}$ , four of the eight cores in each incubator were removed and placed in another incubator at  $24^\circ\text{C}$ . Then  $R_M$  was measured 24 h after incubation at  $24^\circ\text{C}$  (96 h following the start of the incubation). This procedure was repeated for the remaining soil cores after 336 h in the incubators at either  $3^\circ$  or  $9^\circ\text{C}$  followed by 24 h incubation at  $24^\circ\text{C}$  (i.e.

360 h following the start of the incubation). The effects of pre-incubation temperatures (3° and 9°C) and pre-incubation length (70 h and 336 h) on  $R_M$  at 24°C were compared with  $R_M$  from the soil cores continuously incubated at 24°C.

### 3.3.5 Water soluble C and hot water soluble C measurements

The water soluble carbon (WSC) and the hot-water soluble carbon (HWSC) were determined using a procedure described by Ghani et al. (2003). The experimental design for this part of the experiment was a completely randomized block with three replications. Soil cores described above were randomly assigned to one of the three incubators at either 3°, 9°, or 24°C and fresh soil samples (equivalent of 25 g dry soil) were removed from three randomly chosen soil cores from each incubator at 24, 72, 192, and 336 h following the start of the incubation. Then the soil samples were placed in 300 ml centrifuge bottles and shaken with 150 ml of distilled water at 20°C for 1 h. The samples were then centrifuged for 30 min at 4000 rev min<sup>-1</sup>, the supernatant filtered through a 0.45 µm cellulose membrane filter, and the amount of soluble organic C determined using a total C analyser (TOC-5000A, Shimadzu Oceania Pty Ltd, NSW, Australia). This was the WSC fraction of the soil organic C. A further 150 ml of distilled water was added to the sediments remaining in the centrifuge tubes after the supernatants (WSC) were decanted and the tubes were capped and left for 16 h in a hot-water bath at 80°C. The samples were then centrifuged, filtered, and analysed for soluble organic C contents using the same methods as for the WSC analysis. This was the HWSC fraction of the soil organic C. Values of WSC and HWSC are expressed here as a mass of C (mg C) per unit mass of the contained soil (kg<sup>-1</sup>).

### 3.3.6 Statistical analysis

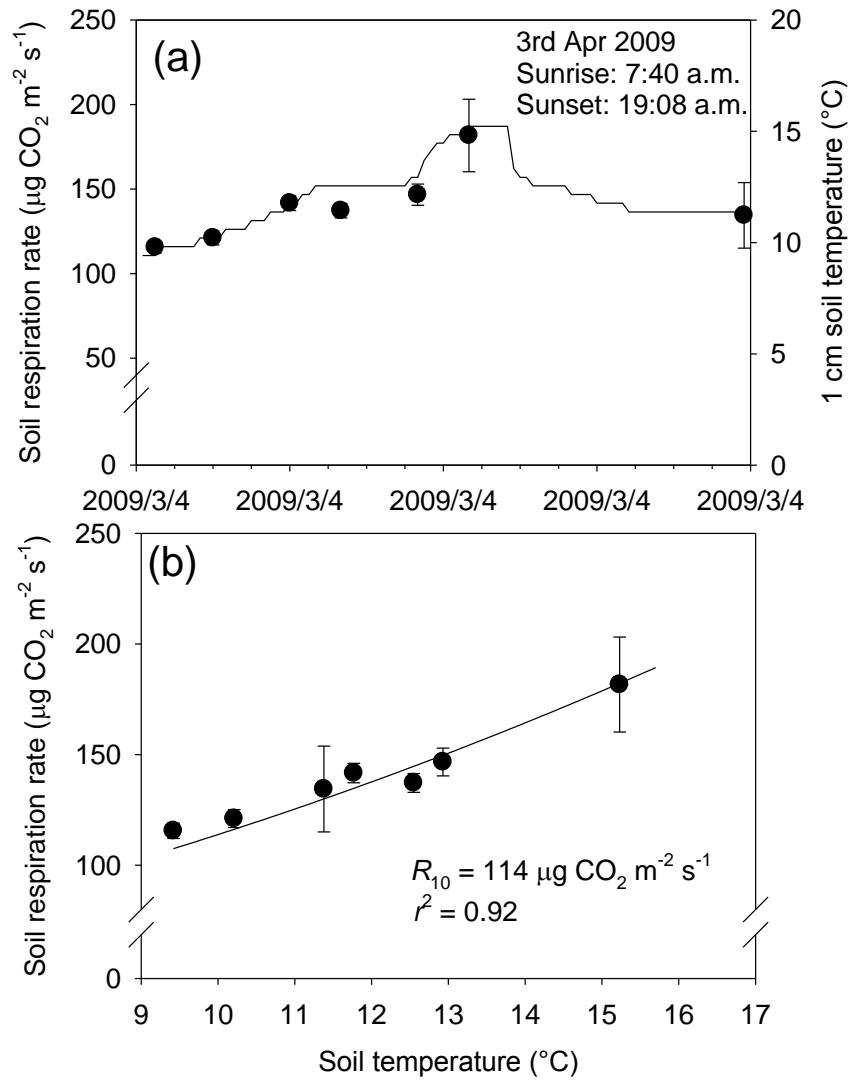
One-way analysis of variance tests were performed on  $R_M$ , WSC, and HWSC for each day of measurement to determine significant differences between the temperature treatments from 24 h to 336 h. Each data set was tested for normality according to the Anderson-Darling normality test and the data set was normally distributed (Anderson and Darling, 1952).

## 3.4 Results

### 3.4.1 Field measurements of soil respiration

Over the day  $T_S$  varied from 9° to 15°C while  $R_S$  increased from  $116 \pm 3 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$  just before sunrise to  $182 \pm 21 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$  late in the afternoon (Fig. 3.2a). Substrate limitation was not indicated because  $R_S$  and  $T_S$  data corresponded to the Lloyd and Taylor model ( $r^2 = 0.92$ , Fig. 3.2b). The response of  $R_S$  to changes in  $T_S$  was rapid, for example, the largest

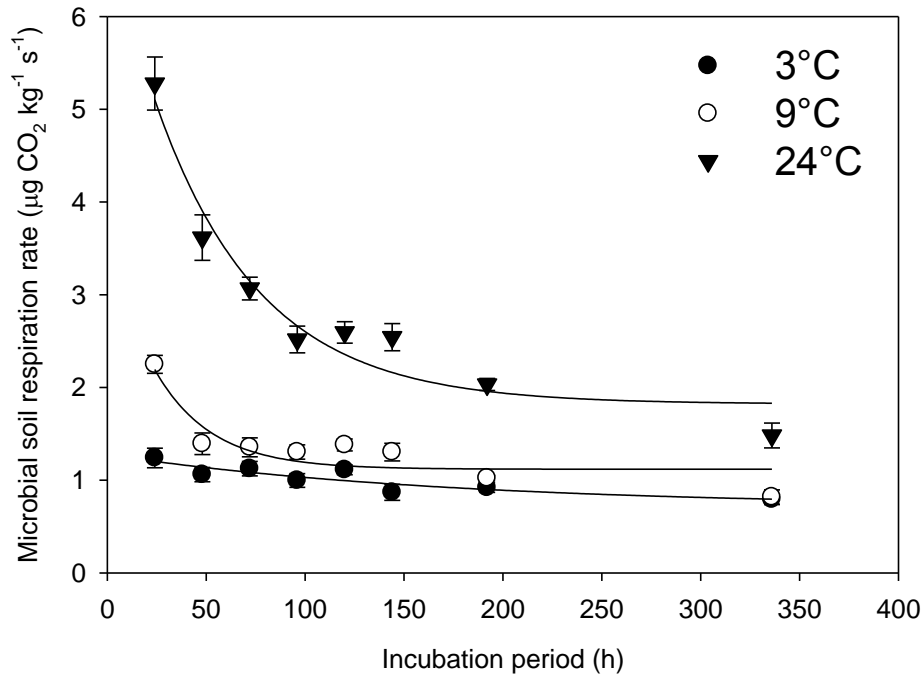
increase in  $T_s$  occurred between 14:20 a.m. and 15:40 a.m. (NZST), when  $T_s$  and  $R_s$  increased by  $2.3^{\circ}\text{C}$  and  $30\ \mu\text{g CO}_2\ \text{m}^{-2}\ \text{s}^{-1}$  (22%), respectively. Measurements of  $R_s$  taken late in the afternoon onwards were relatively variable. Some of the  $R_s$  measurement locations were shaded due to nearby trees while  $T_s$  was measured at one location, the variable shading affected  $R_s$ . Based on the Lloyd and Taylor equation (eqn. 3.2), the parameter  $R_{10}$  was estimated as  $114\ \mu\text{g CO}_2\ \text{m}^{-2}\ \text{s}^{-1}$ .



**Figure 3.2** Soil respiration rate ( $R_s$ ,  $\mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ ) and continuously measured soil temperature (1 cm depth) during a fine day, 3<sup>rd</sup> April 2009, at Lincoln, New Zealand. Diel courses of the soil temperature (solid line,  $^{\circ}\text{C}$ ) and  $R_s$  (•) over time are shown in (a) and the curve in (b) was fitted to the data by regression, as described in the text. The Lloyd and Taylor model was fitted according to  $R_{10}$ ,  $R_s$  at  $10^{\circ}\text{C}$ , and accounted for 92% of the variance.

### 3.4.2 Effects of temperature on soil CO<sub>2</sub> flux

At 3°C,  $R_M$  did not significantly change over the 336 h incubation period. However,  $R_M$  declined significantly over time for soils at 9°C and 24°C (Fig. 3.3). At 9°C and 24°C,  $R_M$  was approximately halved after an incubation period of approximately 48 h but the amount of CO<sub>2</sub> respired was significantly greater at 24°C. The exponential decay model (eqn. 3.3) fitted the data well and the parameters are shown in Table 3.1. The mass of C emitted as CO<sub>2</sub> to the atmosphere from 24 h until 336 h was  $295 \pm 25$ ,  $354 \pm 25$ , and  $726 \pm 18$  mg C kg<sup>-1</sup> soil at 3°, 9°, and 24°C, respectively. There was a significant effect of  $T_S$  on the amount of CO<sub>2</sub>-C emitted during the incubation period ( $p < 0.01$ ). The time constants (h) for  $R_M$  at 24°, 9°, and 3°C were  $76 \pm 4$ ,  $53 \pm 3$ , and  $185 \pm 55$  h, respectively. The time constants for  $R_M$  at 24° and 9°C, which were not significantly different from each other, were significantly shorter than the time constant for  $R_M$  at 3°C based on the Fisher's individual confidence interval test ( $p = 0.05$ ).

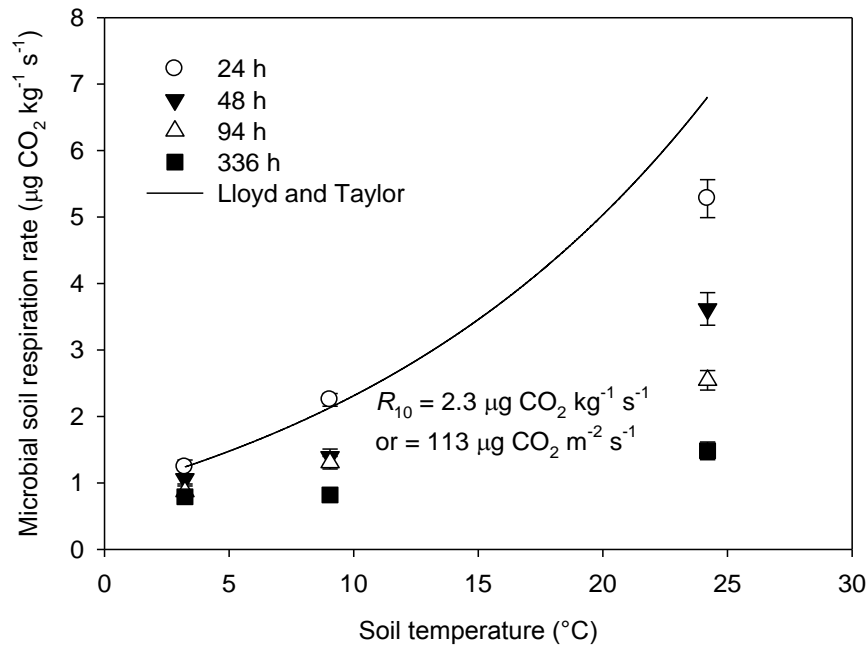


**Figure 3.3** Soil microbial respiration rates ( $R_M$ ) for samples incubated at three temperatures. Error bars are SEM. The curves were fitted to the data by regression using a model of the form  $R_M(t) = a + br^t$ . An asymptote was determined by parameter  $a$ ,  $b$  was a scaling factor, and  $t$  was time (h) elapsed during the incubation. The values for parameters  $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $r$  are shown in Table 3.1.

**Table 3.1** The parameters describing the responses of soil respiration rate over time at different temperatures. The model used was  $R_M = a + br^f$  and standard errors for each parameters are shown in the “s.e.” columns. For each parameter, different letters denote significant differences.

	3°C		9°C		24°C	
parameter	estimate	s.e.	estimate	s.e.	estimate	s.e.
$r$	0.9943 <sup>a</sup>	0.0139	0.9629 <sup>a</sup>	0.0199	0.9813 <sup>a</sup>	0.0033
$b$	0.561 <sup>c</sup>	0.493	2.660 <sup>b</sup>	1.460	5.167 <sup>a</sup>	0.528
$a$	0.714 <sup>b</sup>	0.607	1.128 <sup>b</sup>	0.118	1.823 <sup>a</sup>	0.175

The response of  $R_M$  to  $T_S$  was predicted by the Lloyd and Taylor model (eqn. 3.2) on the first day of incubation (Fig. 3.4). The parameter  $R_{10}$  was  $2.3 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$ . To compare this  $R_{10}$  value with the  $R_{10}$  obtained from the field study, the  $R_{10}$  from the laboratory study was converted to  $\mu\text{g CO}_2$  per unit area ( $\text{m}^{-2}$ ) per second using the soil bulk density ( $980 \pm 80 \text{ kg m}^{-3}$ ) and a depth of 5 cm, thus the estimated  $R_{10}$  for the current laboratory study was  $113 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ .



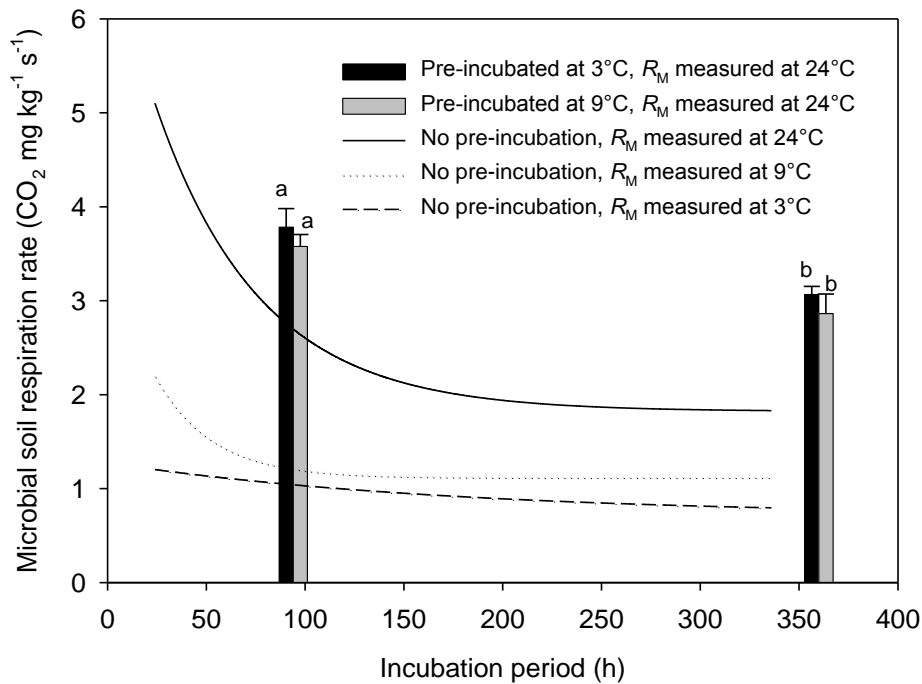
**Figure 3.4** The responses of soil microbial respiration to soil temperature (symbols) and the Lloyd and Taylor model (solid line). Error bars are SEM ( $n = 8$ ). The Lloyd and Taylor model was fitted to the soil microbial respiration rate at 3°C, 24 h into the incubation. The parameter  $R_{10}$  (respiration rate at 10°C) is noted on the figure using different units,  $\mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$  and  $\mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ . The latter units included a bulk density of  $980 \text{ kg m}^{-3}$  and depth of 0.05 m.



### 3.4.3 The effect of temperature alteration on soil respiration rates

Soil samples were pre-incubated at 3° or 9°C for 72 h or 336 h, and then incubated at 24°C for 24 h. The  $R_M$  flux was measured immediately following the 24 h incubation at 24°C. The  $R_M$  fluxes from soil samples at 3°C with 72 h pre-incubation, and at 3°C with 336 h pre-incubation, at 9°C with 72 h pre-incubation, at 9°C with 336 h pre-incubation were  $3.8 \pm 0.4 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$ ,  $3.1 \pm 0.1 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$ ,  $3.6 \pm 0.3 \text{ CO}_2 \mu\text{g kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$  and  $2.9 \pm 0.2 \text{ CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$ , respectively (Fig. 3.5). Overall, pre-incubation temperature (3° and 9°C) did not significantly change  $R_M$  at 24°C, but the longer pre-incubation period (336 h) reduced  $R_M$  ( $p < 0.05$ ) at 24°C, when compared to  $R_M$  at 24°C from soils incubated for 72 h.

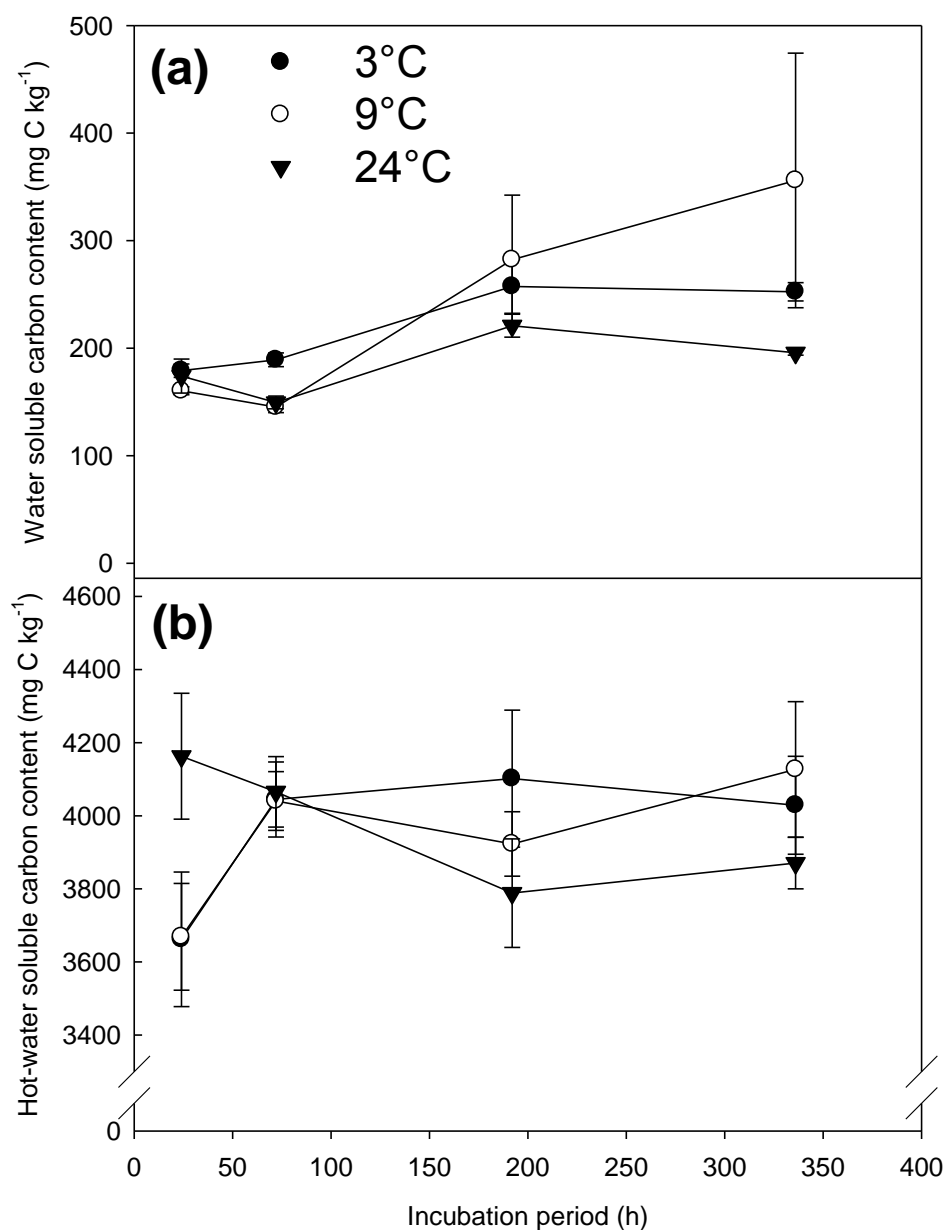
The values for  $R_M$  at 24°C after 72 h and 336 h of pre-incubations at lower temperatures (averaged over pre-incubation temperatures) were, on average,  $38 \pm 8\%$  and  $62 \pm 12\%$  higher than the  $R_M$  of soil samples continuously incubated at 24°C for the same periods but the two proportional increases were not significantly different.



**Figure 3.5** The effects of pre-incubation temperature and period on soil microbial respiration ( $R_M$ ) at 24°C. The bars at 96 h are  $R_M$  after a 24 h incubation at 24°C for samples that were pre-incubated at 3° (black bar) and 9°C (silver bar) for 72 h. The bars at 360 h are  $R_M$  after a 24 h incubation at 24°C for samples that were pre-incubated at 3° (black bar) and 9°C (silver bar) for 336 h. Error bars are SEM ( $n = 4$ ). The curves shown in Fig. 3.3 portray  $R_M$  over time for samples that were continuously incubated at 24°, 9°, or 3°C.

### 3.4.4 Effects of temperature on WSC and HWSC

The concentrations of WSC and HWSC extracted from the incubated soils did not change significantly over time (Fig. 3.6). No clear relationship was observed between  $R_M$  and either WSC or HWSC. There was also no clear effect of  $T_S$  on WSC and HWSC. On average, the amounts of WSC and HWSC varied from approximately 150 to 350 mg C kg<sup>-1</sup> dry soil and 3600 to 4200 mg C kg<sup>-1</sup> dry soil, respectively, during 336 h of incubation.



**Figure 3.6** Water soluble C content (a) and hot-water soluble C content (b) of soil samples incubated at 3°, 9°, and 24°C. The error bars were SEM ( $n = 3$ ).

## 3.5 Discussion

### 3.5.1 Responses of soil respiration to changing temperatures

In the field,  $R_S$  responded in synchrony with  $T_S$  which changed significantly and rapidly during the day. The responses of  $R_S$  to  $T_S$  were predicted by the Lloyd and Taylor model. Thus, I concluded that the pasture plants had supplied the required readily available C for  $R_S$ . However, the laboratory study showed that C substrate limitation of  $R_M$  occurred within 1 d at 24°C. The parameter  $R_{10}$  for  $R_S$  from the field study was 114  $\mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$  including root and microbial respiration. Unexpectedly, this  $R_{10}$  was similar to  $R_{10}$  for  $R_M$  from the laboratory studies that included only microbes (113  $\mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ , Fig. 3.4). This suggested  $R_M$  measured in the laboratory had been unduly large. This was interpreted to reflect a microbial stress response to disturbance caused by sieving of the samples prior to incubation and measurement. Earlier field studies showed that for intensively managed grassland soils,  $R_{10}$  for  $R_S$  was  $\sim 200 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$  (Kelliher et al., 2002; Tate et al., 2000). The C supply rate can be affected by the weather and nutrient supply, and different soils having different  $R_{10}$  for  $R_S$  may have different availabilities of C substrates (Paul et al., 1999; Singh et al., 2009). In a fallow field without plants,  $R_S$  also responded in synchrony with  $T_S$  which changed significantly and rapidly during the day but  $R_{10}$  for  $R_S$  was only  $\sim 10 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$  (Nakadai et al., 2002).

During the laboratory incubations,  $R_M$  decreased significantly at the initial stage of the incubation for the soil samples at 9° and 24°C. However,  $R_M$  from the samples at 3°C was relatively constant (Fig. 3.3). The rates of decrease in  $R_M$  at 9° and 24°C were similar to values from earlier studies where  $R_M$  decreased by approximately 50%, within 3 d after clipping vegetation (Craine et al., 1999; Wan and Luo, 2003). The decrease of  $R_M$  was caused due to C substrate limitation. A previous study showed that when  $T_S$  was held constant at 20°C, applying readily available C to soil, in the form of dried ground pasture leaves, corresponded with  $R_M$  increasing nearly immediately and significantly for 17 days (Kelliher et al., 2007).

According to the time constants,  $R_M$  at 9°C and 24°C decayed at a similar rate but the amount of C evolved was significantly larger at 24°C, suggesting that the microbial community's ability to access the more recalcitrant soil C fraction(s) was positively related to  $T_S$ . Towards the end of the incubation period,  $R_M$  was clearly substrate limited at 9°C and 24°C but the soils at 24°C had a significantly higher  $R_M$  (Fig. 3.3). The amount of C emitted before  $R_M$  showed signs of substrate limitation was also much larger for soil samples at 24°C as

indicated by higher  $R_M$  in soil samples at 24°C compared to samples at 9°C and by the fact that the time constants calculated from the eqn. 3.3 were not significantly different between 9° and 24°C. While these results support earlier studies (Koch et al., 2007; Kuzyakov, 2002; Mikan et al., 2002), where microbes decomposed more recalcitrant C at higher temperatures, this study was done at much lower temperatures corresponding to a temperate climate.

The apparently reduced temperature sensitivity of  $R_M$  from soil, after C substrate supply ceased (Fig. 3.4), has been reported for other soils, although these were forest soils or pastoral soils at a much higher temperature range (20° to 40°C) (Kirschbaum, 2006; Townsend et al., 1997; Winkler et al., 1996). The information on the relationship between the C substrate limitation and  $R_M$  in pasture soils at field temperatures is particularly important because, when  $T_S$  was held constant, the response of  $R_M$  to readily available C application was significantly faster and greater for soil sampled at a highly productive dairy farm pasture compared to soil sampled at a pristine forest that had never been fertilized (Kelliher et al., 2005a). During the plant growing season, it has been reported  $R_M$  responded to  $T_S$  according to the Arrhenius type relation but the response lessened significantly when the plants were dormant or absent (Kirschbaum, 2006; Rustad et al., 2001). Kirschbaum (2006) emphasized the importance of seasonal changes in the apparent temperature sensitivity of  $R_M$  caused by different levels of C substrate limitation. The current study supports this idea but I also note that the apparent temperature sensitivity of  $R_M$  in pasture systems could change significantly on a daily basis if the rate of readily available C substrate inputs from the vegetation did not change in synchrony. Pasture plants can transfer C belowground rapidly. An earlier study showed that, in high fertile pastoral soils, more than 10% of the C uptake by ryegrass was transferred to the soil within 24 h (Butler et al. 2004). Similarly, Saggar and Hedley (2001) reported that 1.2 – 4.0% of the C uptake by dairy farm pasture was transferred to the soil within 4 h. It is also important to note that temperature influenced the efficiency of C utilization (Steinweg et al., 2008). Steinweg et al. (2008) reported that the microbial community was more efficient, released less CO<sub>2</sub> per unit of assimilated C, at lower temperatures. Hence, further study is needed to investigate the interaction between the efficiency of C utilization, C substrate availability, and  $T_S$ .

### **3.5.2 WSC and HWC**

I tested two measures proposed to determine the amount of readily available C substrates in soils namely, WSC and HWSC analyses. Neither indicated the occurrence of substrate limitation with respect to  $R_M$ . At 24°C, for example,  $R_M$  decreased approximately 70% during the 336 h incubation and the soil emitted  $726 \pm 18 \text{ mg C kg}^{-1} \text{ soil}$ , as CO<sub>2</sub>, to the atmosphere.

During the same period of incubation at 24°C, WSC and HWSC were constant at approximately 30% (~ 200 mg C kg<sup>-1</sup> soil) and 550% (~ 4000 mg C kg<sup>-1</sup> soil) of the amount of C emitted to the atmosphere (Fig. 3.6). An earlier treatment that had significantly changed  $R_M$  over time was not related to WSC at constant  $T_S$  of 20°C for soil sampled from the same dairy farm (Kelliher et al., 2005b). However, the current study encompassed a wide range of temperature and highlighted the fact that neither WSC nor HWSC were related to  $R_M$ . Two studies reported a strong linear relationship between WSC and  $R_M$  when different soil types were compared and when soils were incubated for a longer period (Liu et al., 2006; Wang et al., 2003). Wang et al. (2003) compared soils sampled from 25 different locations and their WSC contents varied from 50 to 1000 mg C kg<sup>-1</sup> soil. The WSC contents were linearly correlated to CO<sub>2</sub>-C evolved in 7 d of incubation at 35°C. Liu et al. (2006) incubated two soils at 30° and 10°C for 35 d and corresponding values of WSC contents were significantly different at the end of the experiment. The difference between the current study and previous studies suggested that WSC and HWSC may not be useful for indicating short-term changes in  $R_M$  over time from one type of soil.

### 3.5.3 The effect of pre-incubation treatments

The pre-incubation experiment indicated that soils maintained readily available C for a longer period at the lower  $T_S$ . The experimental design was similar to a study by Koepf (1953), who reported that the pre-incubating temperature controlled the responses of  $R_M$  to  $T_S$ . The current study had a much lower pre-incubating temperature range (3° – 9°C) compared to Koepf (1953) (10° – 30°C). At the soil sampling site,  $T_S$  was < 10°C for 50% of the time between 2006 to 2008. The two pre-incubating  $T_S$  (3° and 9°C) did not differ in their effect on  $R_M$  when samples were shifted to the higher  $T_S$  (24°C). This was different than Koepf (1953) who reported that different pre-incubating temperatures (10° to 30°C) had different effects on  $R_M$  when samples were shifted to 30°C but results from the current study agree with Bekku et al. (2003) who reported that the pre-incubation of soil samples from an abandoned field at 8° and 12°C for 17 d did not affect the response of  $R_M$  to  $T_S$ . I expected different responses of  $R_M$  at 24°C when samples were pre-incubated at 3° and 9°C since the amount of C lost during the pre-incubation was significantly larger at 9°C. At the sampling site's average  $T_S$  of 9°C, the microbial community structure might have been able to respond more efficiently to the later increased  $T_S$ . Pre-incubation at the minimum  $T_S$  of 3°C may have set the community in a state of dormancy and the 24 h period at a higher  $T_S$  (24°C) may not have been long enough for a complete recovery to the potential microbial activity. The alteration of soil microbial community structure due to an increase in  $T_S$  has been previously reported but for much

longer periods of incubation (Feng and Simpson, 2009). The responses of  $R_M$  from soils pre-incubated for 72 h was higher overall than in those pre-incubated for 336 h. Therefore readily available C substrates were slowly lost during the pre-incubations even at lower  $T_S$ . This type of information is potentially useful for accurately predicting increases in  $R_M$  when  $T_S$  increases rapidly.

### 3.6 Conclusions

At the field site,  $R_S$  responded rapidly to changes in  $T_S$ , increasing 20% in one hour when  $T_S$  increased by 2°C as predicted by an Arrhenius type relation. Soil incubated in the laboratory in the absence of plants showed that  $R_M$  became C substrate limited within a few days at 9° and 24°C. At 3°C,  $R_M$  was relatively constant at  $1.05 \pm 0.03 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$  for 14 d, suggesting a  $T_S$  limitation. The  $T_S$  values chosen for the incubation experiments were the maximum, average, and minimum based on the frequency analysis of  $T_S$  at the field site. At 9° and 24°C,  $R_M$  declined by one time constant (63% decrease within  $53 \pm 3$  and  $76 \pm 4$  h, respectively) but  $R_M$  at 24°C declined to a significantly higher asymptote value than that for  $R_M$  at 9°C. This suggested that microbial ability to access the more recalcitrant C fraction(s) in soils was temperature dependent. The values of WSC and HWSC contents were unexpectedly constant for 14 d at all of the treatment temperatures and were not proportional to changes in  $R_M$ . Thus, measuring WSC and HWSC did not indicate the microbially available C substrate. The non-significant differences in  $R_M$  at 24°C, after samples were pre-incubated for 14 d at 3° or 9°C, suggested that more recalcitrant C substrate was respired at the warmer pre-incubation temperature. This study has shown that  $R_S$  beneath high fertility pasture responded rapidly to  $T_S$  change when the C supply was sufficient. When the C supply was removed,  $R_M$  was dependent on both  $T_S$  and C substrate availability. Further research is required on the mechanisms and effects of C supply in relation to the microbial community of soils, respiration, temperature, and soil fertility.

## Chapter 4

# Fertility and plants affect the temperature sensitivity of carbon dioxide production in soils

*A manuscript from this study has been submitted to Plant and Soil: Uchida, Y., Hunt, J.E., Barbour, M.M., Clough, T.J., Kelliher, F.M., Sherlock, R.R. Fertility and plants affect the temperature sensitivity of carbon dioxide production in soils.*

### 4.1 Abstract

Soil temperature can strongly regulate soil respiration ( $R_S$ ). However, despite abundant literature, the predicted response of  $R_S$  to possible climate change remains uncertain. I hypothesized that some of the variability in results to date was due to the influence of soil fertility and absence or presence of plants. Using dairy farm pastoral soils of contrasting nutrient status, e.g. Olsen P, C: N ratio, and available N, the temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$  was measured. Measurements made in soil samples incubated at 13 – 27°C for several days without plants showed respiration derived from organic matter ( $R_{OM}$ ) averaged ~3 times greater in the high fertility soil. In the previous chapter, the term “ $R_M$ ” was used to express soil microbial respiration in the absence of plants. However,  $R_M$  included root-derived C respiration because  $R_M$  was measured immediately following the removal of plants from the soil. In this chapter, the term “ $R_{OM}$ ” was used to express soil microbial respiration solely from soil organic matter decomposition and the utilisation of root-derived C is termed  $R_{RD}$ . For both soils, without plants present,  $R_{OM}$  increased similarly by 3 – 4 times over this temperature range. By growing  $C_4$  or  $C_3$  grass species in soils with a different isotope signature, and making measurements of the natural  $^{13}C$  abundance of  $CO_2$  derived from  $R_S$ , the rate of root-derived respiration ( $R_{RD}$ ) and  $R_{OM}$  without disturbance were determined. The temperature sensitivity of  $R_{RD}$  was not affected by soil fertility and  $R_{RD}$  contributed more than 70% of  $R_S$ , on average. However, with plants,  $R_{OM}$  was constant in the low fertility soil in contrast to the soil-only incubations at different temperature. In the high fertility soil, with plants,  $R_{OM}$  doubled as soil temperature increased from 17 – 27°C. The results did not support the idea of a universal nor simple relationship between temperature and carbon dioxide production in soils.

## 4.2 Introduction

Soil respiration ( $R_S$ ) plays a critical role in the carbon (C) cycle of terrestrial ecosystems with approximately 20 – 40% of all non-anthropogenic  $\text{CO}_2$  inputs to the atmosphere produced from soils (Raich and Schlesinger, 1992; Raich and Potter, 1995). Soil respiration rates are positively related to plant productivity (Raich and Schlesinger, 1992) and are negatively related to C:N ratio (Thomsen et al., 2008). In recent years, many studies have focused on partitioning  $R_S$  into its components to understand the relationship between sources of  $\text{CO}_2$  and the environmental factors controlling them. A natural  $^{13}\text{C}$  abundance method enabled the measurements of  $R_S$  components without any disturbance to the system (Hanson et al., 2000; Millard et al., 2008; Robinson and Scrimgeour, 1995), by exploiting the difference in  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  signatures of C fixed by  $\text{C}_3$  and  $\text{C}_4$  photosynthetic pathways (O'Leary, 1988). With this method, a  $\text{C}_4$  plant was grown in a soil developed under  $\text{C}_3$  vegetation ( $\text{C}_3$  soil), and vice versa. A linear mixing model was used with the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  abundances and  $\text{CO}_2$  concentrations of the two naturally labelled contributing sources of  $R_S$ .

The two contributing sources of  $R_S$  were root-derived C and soil C (Trumbore, 2000). Carbon that is respired from root-derived C includes microbial rhizosphere activity, as well as root respiration, and is strongly coupled to photosynthetic activity because it utilizes C substrates recently added to soil by plants (Heilmeyer et al., 1997). Hereafter, root-derived C respiration is defined as  $R_{\text{RD}}$ . The respiration of soil C originates from soil organic matter decomposition. The soil organic matter pool is considerably larger than the root-derived C pool and interest in soil organic matter decomposition has increased recently because of its importance to the global C cycle (Trumbore, 2000). Hereafter respiration from the soil organic matter pool is defined as  $R_{\text{OM}}$ . Soil organic matter is heterogeneous with respect to decomposition because soil organic matter consists of several pools, with characteristic turnover times of less than a year to over several hundred years (Parton et al., 1987). The turnover time of soil organic matter depends on the recalcitrance of soil organic matter (Trumbore, 2000).

Many studies have shown that increases in soil temperature ( $T_S$ ) increase  $R_{\text{OM}}$  (e.g. Kirschbaum, 1995). It has been predicted that global warming may cause a significant increase in  $R_{\text{OM}}$ , resulting in an increase in atmospheric  $\text{CO}_2$  and an acceleration of climate change (Cox et al., 2000). Most of  $\text{CO}_2$  produced during  $R_{\text{OM}}$  is derived from relatively short-lived soil organic matter but the age of soil C utilized by  $R_{\text{OM}}$  varies. For example, in boreal forest sites, the age of soil C utilized by  $R_{\text{OM}}$  was 2 – 30 years but in tropical soils, it was <1 year. The age of soil C is related to the recalcitrance of soil C. The effect of  $T_S$  on  $R_{\text{OM}}$  may vary depending on the relative size of the soil organic matter pools and their respective



recalcitrance. The decomposition of relatively more recalcitrant soil organic matter may be more temperature sensitive (Bol et al., 2003; Hartley and Ineson, 2008; Vanhala et al., 2007). Thermodynamically, the more enzymatic steps that are required for decomposition, the more temperature sensitive the entire process (Bosatta and Ågren, 1999).

Soils have rarely been studied with and without plants, with regards to  $R_{OM}$ . However, Bader and Cheng (2007) showed that, using a soil sampled at a cottonwood tree forest, the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$  markedly changed when plants were present, when compared to  $R_{OM}$  without plants. This is because plants can significantly influence  $R_{OM}$ , a phenomenon commonly termed the “priming effect” (Bingeman et al., 1953). Plants can either accelerate  $R_{OM}$  or suppress it (i.e. a negative priming effect) (Cheng et al., 2003; Cheng, 1996).

The relative magnitude of the priming effect may depend on the size of the soil organic C pool (Kuzyakov et al., 2000), plant species and phenology (Cheng et al., 2003), photosynthetic intensity (Kuzyakov and Cheng, 2001b), plant biomass (Dijkstra et al., 2006), and soil nutrient status such as soil-N content (Liljeroth et al., 1994). Soil temperature may also indirectly affect the magnitude of the priming effect by controlling plant activity (Scott-Denton et al., 2006). Thus, the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$  may be influenced by both the presence of plants and soil fertility. Currently there are no studies that have observed the influences of plant presence and soil fertility on the temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$ ,  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$  in pastoral soils.

In this study, a natural  $^{13}\text{C}$  abundance method was used to measure the contribution of  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$  to total  $R_S$ . This technique permitted the distinction between  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$ , rather than strictly microbial versus root respiration. However, I argue that the root-derived C pool will dominate the root and associated microbial rhizosphere respiration, while  $\text{CO}_2$  released carrying a soil C isotope signal must derive from microbial activity in the bulk soil. There was no contribution to  $R_S$  from litter decomposition due to the lack of litter production over the time period of the study.

To investigate the effect of soil fertility on the temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$ , with respect to  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$ , Two dairy farm pasture soils of contrasting nutrient status and plant productivity were sampled. It was hypothesised that soil nutrient status would influence the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$  in the absence of plants, but in the presence of plants, both photosynthetic activity and soil nutrient status would affect the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$ . This hypothesis was based on the assumption that  $R_{RD}$  is closely associated with plant

activity while  $R_{OM}$  is associated both with the recalcitrance of soil organic matter and nutrient availability in soils.

## 4.3 Materials and methods

### 4.3.1 Soil

Soils were sampled (0-5 cm depth) from two dairy-farm pasture sites; one from an extensively managed low productivity dairy farm at Kerikeri, Northland, New Zealand (35°16'S, 173°55'E, 79 masl) and the other from an intensively managed high productivity dairy farm at Lincoln, Canterbury, New Zealand (43°39'S, 172°29'E, 8 masl). The mean annual  $T_s$  (10 cm depth, in years 2006 to 2008) at the respective sampling sites were  $15.0 \pm 1.1^\circ\text{C}$  and  $10.5 \pm 0.2^\circ\text{C}$ , respectively ( $\pm$  SD based on the average  $T_s$  for the three years). The Lincoln soil had a high fertility (*HF*), indicated by nutrient contents significantly greater than the low fertility (*LF*) Kerikeri soil (Table 4.1). The *LF* soil was a well-drained Kerikeri friable clay loam (Mottled Orthic Granular Soil; Hewitt, 1993)(Typic Haplohumox; Soil Survey Staff, 1998) and the *HF* soil was a poorly drained Temuka silt loam (Typic Orthic Gley Soil; Hewitt, 1993) (Fluvaquentic Endoaquept; Soil Survey Staff, 1998). I recognize the fact that the two soils were of different parent material but the definition of fertility is based on measured variables (Table 4.1). The *LF* soil was dominated by a  $C_4$  pasture grass (kikuyu, *Pennisetum clandestinum* Hochst.) and the *HF* soil was dominated by a  $C_3$  perennial ryegrass (*Lolium perenne* L.). At both sites, these pasture species had been present for > 20 years. Soils were passed through a 5.6 mm sieve and were stored for approximately 2 months at  $< 4^\circ\text{C}$ .

**Table 4.1 Selected properties of the *LF* and *HF* soils. The soil test was performed by R J Hill Laboratories Limited, Hamilton, New Zealand. Total nutrient was measured using an EPA Aqua Regia digest method. Available N was measured using an anaerobically mineralizable N method. Water soluble C and hot-water soluble C were measured using a method described by Ghani et al. (2003) and are the mean  $\pm$  SEM ( $n = 3$ ). The soils were collected in April 2009.**

Soil	<i>LF</i> soil	<i>HF</i> soil
pH	5.6	5.9
Olsen P (mg l <sup>-1</sup> )	18	33
Potassium (mmol kg <sup>-1</sup> )	2.4	5.7
Calcium (mmol kg <sup>-1</sup> )	58	103
Magnesium (mmol kg <sup>-1</sup> )	8.5	19.7
Sodium (mmol kg <sup>-1</sup> )	2.5	5.3
CEC (cmolc kg <sup>-1</sup> )	21	35
Base saturation (%)	64	74
Soil density (g cm <sup>-3</sup> )	0.92	0.70
Available N (15 cm depth, kg ha <sup>-1</sup> )	414	640
Organic matter (%)	13.3	15.5
Total C (%)	7.7	9.0
Total N (%)	0.66	0.90
C: N ratio	11.7	10.0
Anaerobically mineralisable N (kg ha <sup>-1</sup> )	299	606
Water soluble organic C (mg C kg <sup>-1</sup> )	161 $\pm$ 50	277 $\pm$ 24
Hot-water soluble organic C (mg C kg <sup>-1</sup> )	2424 $\pm$ 556	4658 $\pm$ 121

#### 4.3.2 Preparation of pots

The sieved soils were packed to a 10 cm depth into funnel shaped pots (12 cm deep, 22 cm and 10 cm in diameter on the top and the bottom, respectively). Each pot contained the equivalent of 2200 g dry soil. The soil C in the *LF* and *HF* soils was derived from the original plant cover, kikuyu (*C*<sub>4</sub>) and perennial ryegrass (*C*<sub>3</sub>), respectively. Preliminary studies showed that the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  signatures of CO<sub>2</sub> respired from *R*<sub>OM</sub> in the *LF* and *HF* soils without plants at 15°C were  $-13.6 \pm 0.2$  and  $-27.4 \pm 0.1\text{‰}$  (expressed as  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{V-PDB}}$ ), respectively ( $\pm$  SEM). Hence to create a difference in  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  signatures between *R*<sub>OM</sub> and *R*<sub>RD</sub>, *C*<sub>3</sub> perennial ryegrass (*L. perenne*) was planted into the previously *C*<sub>4</sub> *LF* soil and *C*<sub>4</sub> paspalum (*Paspalum dilatatum* Poir.) was planted into the previously *C*<sub>3</sub> *HF* soil. These species typify pastures grown in the temperate and sub-tropical climate regions of New Zealand. The seeds of each species were only planted on the edge of each pot and an aluminium collar (7 cm depth and 14 cm in diameter) was inserted into the middle of the soil surface of each pot to allow *R*<sub>S</sub>

measurements to be made (see section 4.3.3). The pots were maintained at 20°C in a glasshouse and watered daily for 8 – 12 weeks until plants had established. Urea fertilizer was applied three times during the establishment of the plants at 1, 3, and 5 weeks following the germination of the seeds (60 kg N ha<sup>-1</sup>), but no fertilizer was applied three weeks prior to  $R_S$  measurements. Pots without plants were also prepared to obtain the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  signatures of the bulk soil. These were used to obtain the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  signatures of CO<sub>2</sub> respired from  $R_{OM}$  (see section 4.3.4).

### 4.3.3 Total soil respiration measurements

Four and six replicate pots of the *LF* and *HF* soil, respectively, with plants, were allocated to one of four nominal temperature treatments (10°, 15°, 20°, and 25°C). Temperature treatments were applied using controlled-environment growth cabinets at ambient CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations, 70% humidity with a 16 h day length. Soil temperature ( $T_S$ ) was measured with a thermocouple (5 cm depth) during the collection of soil-respired CO<sub>2</sub>. Although cabinet temperatures were stable to within 1°C of the set point,  $T_S$  was increased by radiation loading. Hence, the actual measured  $T_S$  are used in the analysis. There were three replicate pots of each soil type without plants. Photosynthetic photon flux density was 650 - 700  $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$  at the height of the uppermost leaves (measured with a quantum sensor, L190SA; Li-Cor, Inc., Lincoln, NE, USA). One day before the application of the temperature treatments, pots were watered to field capacity, drained, and then weighed after 12 h to obtain a value for field capacity. The soil moisture was then maintained at field capacity throughout the experiment by daily watering onto the soil surface. Field capacity was chosen since the optimum soil moisture content for  $R_S$  has been frequently found at this level of soil moisture (Howard and Howard, 1993; Rey et al., 2005).

Pots were conditioned for at least 6 d in the growth cabinet at the appropriate treatment temperatures and measurements of  $R_S$  were performed between day 7 and 13 following the start of temperature treatment. A portable chamber with an infrared gas analyser (SRC-1 and EGM-1, PP Systems, Hitchin, UK) was used to measure  $R_S$ . The chamber was directly connected onto the aluminium collar on soil surface. The values of  $R_S$  were expressed as a mass of CO<sub>2</sub> ( $\mu\text{g CO}_2$ ) per unit mass of dry soil ( $\text{kg}^{-1}$ ) per unit time ( $\text{s}^{-1}$ ) and also as a mass of CO<sub>2</sub> ( $\mu\text{g CO}_2$ ) per unit mass of plant biomass ( $\text{g}^{-1}$ ) per unit time ( $\text{s}^{-1}$ ).

### 4.3.4 Collection of respired CO<sub>2</sub> from various sources and $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ measurements

Soil-respired CO<sub>2</sub> ( $R_S$ ) was collected into evacuated 2 l Tedlar® bags immediately after the  $R_S$  rates were measured using an open chamber system, described by Midwood et al. (2008).

Midwood et al. (2008) used an open chamber with a CO<sub>2</sub> free air to sample soil-respired CO<sub>2</sub> without the influence of atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub>. To collect CO<sub>2</sub> respired from  $R_{RD}$ , roots were separated from the soil after the measurement of  $R_S$ . The roots were then gently washed to remove soil, placed in Tedlar® bags, and the bags flushed with CO<sub>2</sub>-free air. To collect CO<sub>2</sub> respired from  $R_{OM}$ , a sub-sample of the soils in the pots without plants was placed in Tedlar® bags and flushed with CO<sub>2</sub>-free air. Bags with either roots or soils were incubated at the appropriate treatment temperatures until the concentration of CO<sub>2</sub> in the bags reached the calibrated concentration range of the tuneable diode laser (350 to 500  $\mu\text{mol mol}^{-1}$ ) where upon they were analysed for  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values.

The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of CO<sub>2</sub> sourced from  $R_S$ ,  $R_{RD}$ , and  $R_{OM}$  were determined using a tuneable diode laser absorption spectrometer (TDL, TGA2000, Campbell Scientific Inc. Logan, UT, USA), with a precision of  $\pm 0.1\%$ . The TDL system quantitatively assesses the concentrations of  $^{12}\text{CO}_2$  and  $^{13}\text{CO}_2$  at the same time using a laser absorption spectrometry. The TDL was described by Bowling et al. (2003). The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of CO<sub>2</sub> sourced from  $R_S$ ,  $R_{RD}$ , and  $R_{OM}$  were termed  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{R_S}$ ,  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{R_{RD}}$ , and  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{O_M}$ , respectively.

#### 4.3.5 Calculation of $R_{OM}$ and $R_{RD}$ rates

The ratio  $R_{OM}/R_S = f_{OM}$  was calculated using a mixing model (eqn. 4.1) described by Kuzyakov (2004). The remainder was called  $f_{RD}$  (eqn. 4.2). The rates of  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$  were obtained by multiplying  $f_{OM}$  or  $f_{RD}$ , respectively, with the plant biomass based values of  $R_S$ .

$$f_{OM} = \frac{\delta^{13}\text{C}_{R_S} - \delta^{13}\text{C}_{R_{RD}}}{\delta^{13}\text{C}_{O_M} - \delta^{13}\text{C}_{R_{RD}}} \quad (4.1)$$

$$f_{RD} = 1 - f_{OM} \quad (4.2)$$

When there were plants,  $R_S$  was expressed on the basis of both plant biomass and soil weight, the later for comparison with  $R_S$  measured from the soil samples in the absence of plants.

The variances (i.e. the square of standard errors,  $\sigma$ ) of  $f_{OM}$  were calculated as described by Phillips and Gregg (2001) (eqn.4.3):

$$\sigma^2(f_{OM}) = \frac{1}{(\delta^{13}C_{OM} - \delta^{13}C_{RD})^2} \left[ \sigma^2(\delta^{13}C_{Rs}) + f_{OM}^2 \times \sigma^2(\delta^{13}C_{OM}) + (1 - f_{OM})^2 \times \sigma^2(\delta^{13}C_{RD}) \right] \quad (4.3)$$

where  $\sigma^2(\delta^{13}C_{Rs})$ ,  $\sigma^2(\delta^{13}C_{OM})$ , and  $\sigma^2(\delta^{13}C_{RD})$  represent the variances of  $\delta^{13}C_{Rs}$ ,  $\delta^{13}C_{OM}$  and  $\delta^{13}C_{RD}$ , respectively. The variance of  $f_{RD}$  was also determined by switching the  $\delta^{13}C_{OM}$  and  $\delta^{13}C_{RD}$  subscripts in eqn. 4.3. All statistical analyses were performed in GenStat (Lawes Agricultural Trust, Rothamsted, UK).

#### 4.3.6 Temperature sensitivity analysis

The Lloyd and Taylor model (eqn. 4.4) was used to describe the temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$ ,  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$  (Lloyd and Taylor, 1994).

$$R_x = R_{10} e^{E_0 \left( \frac{1}{56.02} - \frac{1}{T_s + 237.15 - T_0} \right)} \quad (4.4)$$

The Arrhenius-type model had three parameters ( $R_{10}$ ,  $E_0$ , and  $T_0$ ). The variable  $T_S$  was measured simultaneously with the  $R_S$  measurements, and  $R_x$  was either  $R_S$ ,  $R_{OM}$  or  $R_{RD}$ . The  $R_{10}$  was a scaling parameter and it equated to  $R_x$  when  $T_S = 10^\circ\text{C}$ . The  $E_0$  (K) was the activation energy divided by the gas constant and the  $T_0$  determined the temperature minimum (K) at which predicted  $R_x$  reached zero. Recent studies used the Lloyd and Taylor model without constraining the parameters (Mäkiranta et al., 2008; Richardson and Hollinger, 2005). I did not constrain  $E_0$  or  $R_{10}$  but  $T_0$  was set at 227.13K, as described by Lloyd and Taylor (1994). The two parameters were fitted to the data set using non-linear regression using GenStat (Lawes Agricultural Trust, Rothamsted, UK).

The  $R_x$  data, based on soil weight, were used to fit the model. However, for the soils with plants, temperature sensitivity of  $R_x$  per unit of soil weight might have been biased since plant biomass (g) per pot, measured after the  $R_x$  measurements, was significantly different between temperature treatments because the plants grew faster at higher temperature during the pre-conditioning and  $\text{CO}_2$  measurement periods. Thus, in order to fit the  $R_x$  data to the model without the bias,  $R_x$  data were expressed on a plant biomass basis when plants were present.

The  $E_0$ , obtained from the fitted Lloyd and Taylor model, were compared, based on the standard error of the difference ( $z$ ) between two  $E_0$  values. The significance of the difference

( $p$  value) was then obtained by comparing the difference between the parameters, divided by  $z$ , and using standard normal curve areas ( $z > 1.96$  corresponds to  $p < 0.05$ ). The same approach was used to compare  $R_{10}$ .

#### **4.3.7 Photosynthetic rate measurements and herbage sample analysis**

Measurements of leaf photosynthesis ( $A$ ) were made on fully expanded leaves using a portable photosynthesis system (LI6400; Li-Cor, Inc. Lincoln, NE, USA) fitted with a leaf chamber 1 – 3 d before  $R_S$  was measured. The light intensity within the leaf chamber was set to match growth photosynthetic photon flux density at the uppermost leaves. Relative humidity and  $\text{CO}_2$  concentration were not controlled within the leaf chamber, and averaged  $56 \pm 2\%$  and  $396 \pm 5 \mu\text{l l}^{-1}$  respectively.  $A$  was measured at the four treatment temperatures described above ( $10^\circ$  to  $25^\circ\text{C}$ ) and the temperature sensitivity of  $A$  was interpreted from measured leaf temperature. Photosynthetic rates for the whole pot were estimated by multiplying  $A$  (per unit leaf area) by the total live leaf area per pot. Pot leaf area was calculated from measured specific leaf mass ( $65 \pm 9$  and  $41 \pm 10 \text{ g m}^{-2}$  for ryegrass and paspalum, respectively) and total leaf dry weight per pot. This estimate of total  $A$  per pot makes the simplifying assumption that all leaves are equally exposed to the same radiation and microclimate conditions. Even though this assumption is not strictly valid, it is argued that it is appropriate because it is the relative differences between pots that are important, rather than the absolute rate of C fixation.

After  $R_S$  measurements and plants were harvested then dried at  $65^\circ\text{C}$ , weighed and finely ground. The leaf and root samples were then separately analysed for N content using an automated mass spectrometer (PDZ-Europa 20-20, Crewe, UK). These N contents (%) were multiplied by leaf and root biomass data and the effect of temperature treatments and soil type were investigated based on the N contents in the leaf and root biomass per pot using a two-way ANOVA. Root biomass was obtained by separating and gently washing the roots from the soil after the measurement of  $R_S$  and drying them in an oven ( $65^\circ\text{C}$ ).

## 4.4 Results

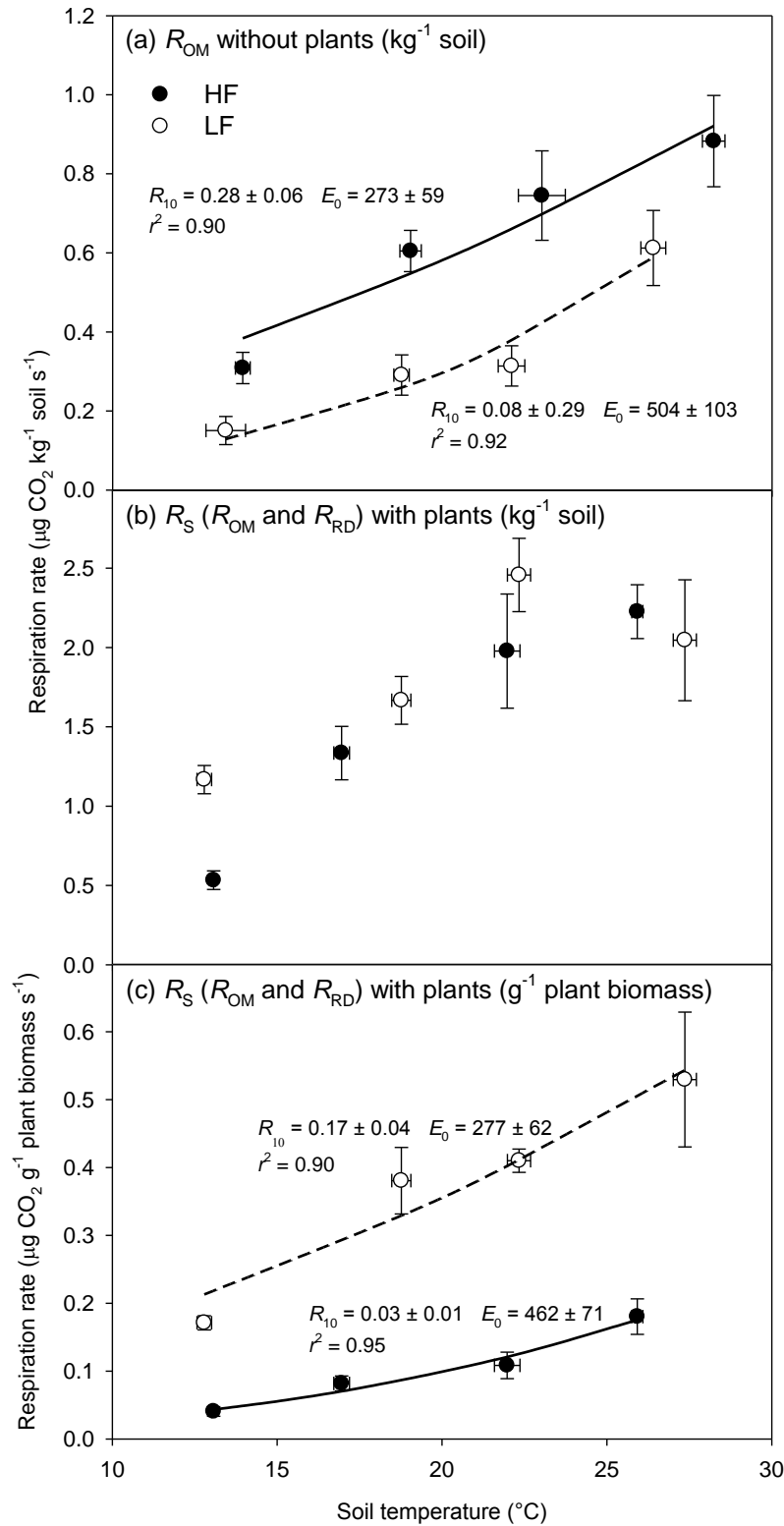
### 4.4.1 Respiration sourced from soil C without plants

Without plants and at the lowest  $T_S$ , the rate of  $R_{OM}$  in the *LF* soil ( $0.15 \pm 0.04 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ soil s}^{-1}$ ) was half the rate in the *HF* soil ( $0.31 \pm 0.04 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ soil s}^{-1}$ ,  $p < 0.05$ , Fig. 4.1a). The rate of  $R_{OM}$  in the *HF* soil was significantly higher than in the *LF* soil at all temperature treatments except at  $25^\circ\text{C}$  (Fig. 4.1a). The Lloyd and Taylor model fitted the change in  $R_{OM}$  and  $T_S$  in the *LF* and *HF* soils well ( $r^2 \geq 0.90$ , Fig. 4.1a). The  $E_0$  values for the *LF* soil ( $504 \pm 103 \text{ K}$ ) and for the *HF* soil ( $273 \pm 59 \text{ K}$ ) were not significantly different ( $p = 0.06$ ) but  $R_{10}$  was significantly ( $p < 0.05$ ) larger for the *HF* soil.

### 4.4.2 Soil respiration rates with plants present

When averaged across all levels of temperature, in the presence of plants,  $R_S$  in the *LF* and *HF* soil ( $1.52 \pm 0.17$  and  $1.83 \pm 0.16 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ soil s}^{-1}$ , respectively) did not differ significantly (Fig. 4.1b). At the lowest  $T_S$ ,  $R_S$  in the *HF* soil ( $0.53 \pm 0.06 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ soil s}^{-1}$ ) was significantly lower than  $R_S$  in the *LF* soil ( $1.18 \pm 0.09 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ soil s}^{-1}$ ) but  $R_S$  did not differ between the two soils at other levels of  $T_S$ . The Lloyd and Taylor model again described the relationship between  $R_S$  and  $T_S$  in the *LF* and *HF* soil well, when  $R_S$  was described based on plant biomass ( $r^2 \geq 0.90$ , Fig. 4.1c). The  $E_0$  for  $R_S$  was significantly larger ( $p < 0.05$ ) for the *HF* soil ( $462 \pm 71 \text{ K}$ ) than the *LF* soil ( $277 \pm 62 \text{ K}$ ) (Fig. 4.1c). For the *LF* soil, the  $R_{10}$  value was significantly larger ( $p < 0.001$ ) than for the *HF* soil (Fig. 4.1c).



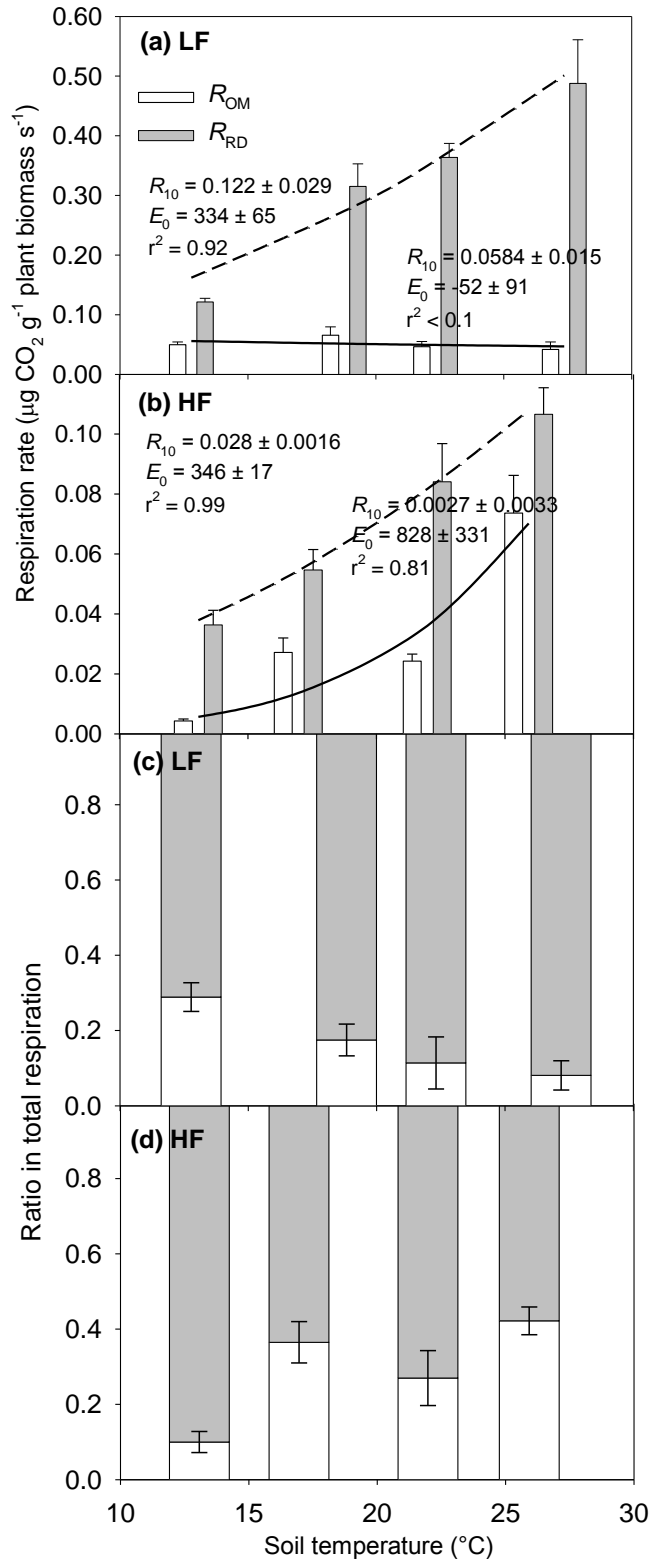


**Figure 4.1** (a)  $R_{OM}$  without plants at different soil temperatures in the *LF* soil (○) and *HF* soil (●) without plants, and (b)  $R_S$  with plants present expressed as on a unit soil basis, or (c) expressed on a unit plant basis. Dashed and solid lines represent the best Lloyd and Taylor (1994) model fitted to  $R_{OM}$  or  $R_S$ , respectively. The  $E_0$ ,  $R_{10}$ , and  $r^2$  values are next to the corresponding curves, with the SE. Error bars are SEM ( $n = 3, 4$ , and 6 for soils without plants, the *LF* soil with plants, and the *HF* soil with plants, respectively). Note different y axis scales. Data in Fig. 4.1(c) was used to separate  $R_S$  into  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$  and the results are shown in Fig. 4.2a and b.

#### 4.4.3 Effects of soil fertility and temperature on $R_{OM}$ and $R_{RD}$

The  $R_S$  data described in Fig. 4.1c was partitioned into the rates of  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$  using the data in Table 4.2 (Fig. 4.2a and 4.2b). When  $T_S$  increased from 13° to 27°C, the  $R_{OM}/R_S$  ratio ( $= f_{OM}$ ) decreased from  $0.29 \pm 0.02$  to  $0.08 \pm 0.05$  in the *LF* soil while the  $f_{OM}$  in the *HF* soil increased from  $0.10 \pm 0.03$  to  $0.43 \pm 0.03$  (Fig. 4.2c and 4.2d). In the *HF* soil, there was no significant difference between the temperature sensitivity ( $E_0$ ) of  $R_{OM}$  with and without plants. For  $R_{RD}$ , there was no effect of soil fertility on the temperature sensitivity.

When  $R_{OM}$  in the presence of plants (Fig. 4.2a and 4.2b) was expressed based on the soil weight,  $R_{OM}$  at the lowest treatment  $T_S$  (~13°C) in the *LF* soil ( $0.29 \pm 0.03 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ soil s}^{-1}$ ) was larger than the  $R_{OM}$  without plants at 13°C in the *LF* soil. For the *HF* soil,  $R_{OM}$  in the presence of plants at 13°C ( $0.05 \pm 0.01 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ soil s}^{-1}$ ) was lower than  $R_{OM}$  without plants at 13°C. In the *HF* soil with plants, the  $R_{OM}$  rates increased to  $0.76 \pm 0.09 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ soil s}^{-1}$  at the highest  $T_S$  (~26°C), while in the *LF* soil with plants, the  $R_{OM}$  rates remained constant at higher  $T_S$ .



**Figure 4.2**  $R_{\text{OM}}$  and  $R_{\text{RD}}$  and their contributions to  $R_{\text{S}}$  in the *LF* soil (a and c) and *HF* soil (b and d). Solid and dashed line in (a) and (b) represent the best Lloyd and Taylor (1994) model fitted to  $R_{\text{OM}}$  and  $R_{\text{RD}}$ , respectively. Parameters ( $E_0$  and  $R_{10}$ ) for the fitted Lloyd and Taylor model and  $r^2$  values are next to the corresponding curves along with the SE. Error bars represent SEM ( $n = 4$  and  $6$  for the *LF* soil and the *HF* soil, respectively). Error bars in (c) and (d) represent propagated SEM for the fraction of  $R_{\text{OM}}$  in  $R_{\text{S}}$  calculated according to Phillips and Gregg (2003) (eqn. 4.3).

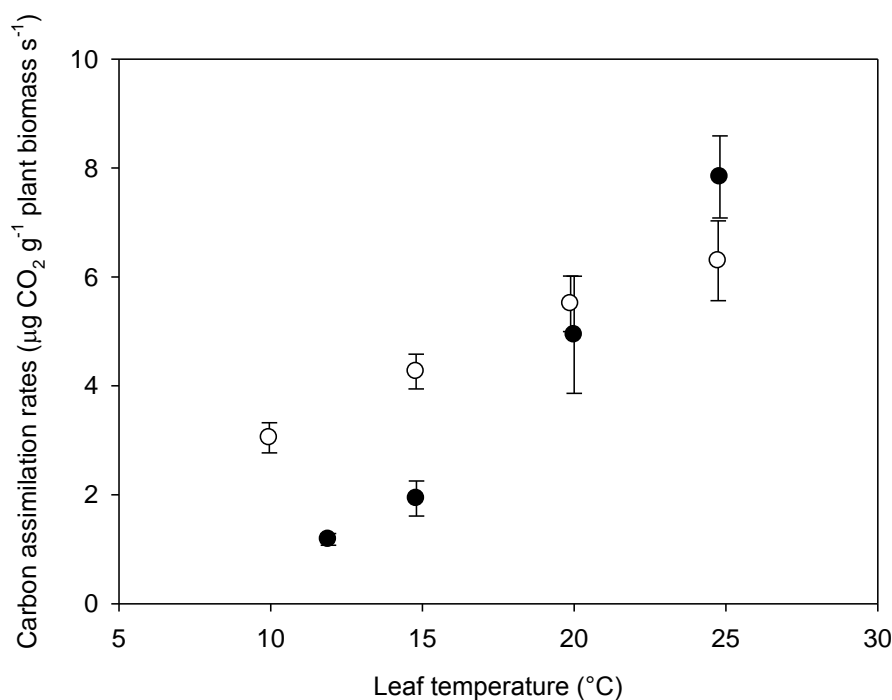
**Table 4.2** The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  abundances of soil-respired  $\text{CO}_2$  ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{Rs}}$ ),  $\text{CO}_2$  sourced from  $R_{\text{RD}}$  ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RD}}$ ),  $\text{CO}_2$  sourced from  $R_{\text{OM}}$  ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}$ ), and calculated fractions of  $R_{\text{OM}}$  ( $f_{\text{OM}}$ ) and  $R_{\text{RD}}$  ( $f_{\text{RD}}$ ) in  $R_{\text{S}}$  from the (a) *LF* and (b) *HF* soil, respectively. Errors of the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  abundances represent SEM ( $n = 4$ :  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{Rs}}$  and  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RD}}$  for *LF*,  $n = 6$ :  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{Rs}}$  and  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RD}}$  for *HF*,  $n = 3$ :  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}$ ). The propagated errors for the fractions ( $f_{\text{OM}}$  and  $f_{\text{RD}}$ ) were calculated based on the errors of the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  abundances using a method described by Phillips and Gregg (2001). \*\*\*, \*\*, and ns denote the significant effect of treatment temperature with  $p < 0.01$ ,  $p < 0.05$ , and  $p \geq 0.05$ , respectively.

(a) <i>LF</i> soil ( $\text{C}_4$ soil)					
	$\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{Rs}}(\text{‰})$	$\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RD}}(\text{‰})$	$\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}(\text{‰})$	$f_{\text{OM}}$	$f_{\text{RD}}$
Treatment °C	***	***	ns	***	***
10°C	$-26.7 \pm 0.2$	$-30.8 \pm 0.1$	$-16.7 \pm 0.5$	$0.29 \pm 0.02$	$0.71 \pm 0.02$
15°C	$-26.2 \pm 0.4$	$-28.2 \pm 0.3$	$-17.1 \pm 0.2$	$0.18 \pm 0.05$	$0.82 \pm 0.05$
20°C	$-27.0 \pm 0.3$	$-28.3 \pm 0.5$	$-17.1 \pm 0.7$	$0.12 \pm 0.06$	$0.88 \pm 0.06$
25°C	$-27.8 \pm 0.4$	$-28.6 \pm 0.3$	$-18.2 \pm 0.2$	$0.08 \pm 0.05$	$0.92 \pm 0.05$
(a) <i>HF</i> soil ( $\text{C}_3$ soil)					
	$\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{Rs}}(\text{‰})$	$\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RD}}(\text{‰})$	$\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}(\text{‰})$	$f_{\text{OM}}$	$f_{\text{RD}}$
Treatment °C	**	***	ns	***	***
10°C	$-15.0 \pm 0.3$	$-13.7 \pm 0.1$	$-26.8 \pm 0.4$	$0.10 \pm 0.03$	$0.90 \pm 0.03$
15°C	$-17.2 \pm 0.6$	$-12.5 \pm 0.2$	$-25.3 \pm 0.4$	$0.37 \pm 0.07$	$0.63 \pm 0.07$
20°C	$-17.1 \pm 0.3$	$-13.4 \pm 0.2$	$-27.2 \pm 0.9$	$0.27 \pm 0.04$	$0.73 \pm 0.04$
25°C	$-18.1 \pm 0.2$	$-12.6 \pm 0.2$	$-25.5 \pm 0.4$	$0.43 \pm 0.03$	$0.57 \pm 0.03$

#### 4.4.4 Carbon assimilation rates and $R_{RD}$

As expected, C assimilation rates (net photosynthetic rate,  $A$ ) increased with increasing leaf temperature for both ryegrass and paspalum (Fig. 4.3). At  $< 15^{\circ}\text{C}$  ryegrass in the  $LF$  soil had higher values of  $A$  per unit leaf biomass than paspalum in the  $HF$  soil (Fig. 4.3). For ryegrass, there was no further increase in C assimilation rates above  $20^{\circ}\text{C}$  while assimilation rates for paspalum continued to increase, reflecting higher thermal optima for  $C_4$  photosynthesis (Long, 1999).

The calculated  $A$  per pot reached a maxima at  $20^{\circ}$  and  $25^{\circ}\text{C}$  for ryegrass ( $62 \pm 4 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ pot}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$ ) and paspalum ( $185 \pm 15 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ pot}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$ ), respectively (Table 4.3). The  $R_{RD}$  rates as a percentage of the net C assimilation rates ( $R_{RD}/A$ ) were  $6.4 \pm 0.8$  and  $2.2 \pm 0.4\%$  for ryegrass and paspalum, respectively (Table 4.3), when averaged across all temperature treatments. Hence,  $R_{RD}/A$  was three times greater in the  $LF$  soil than in the  $HF$  soil. For the  $HF$  soil,  $R_{RD}/A$  increased as  $T_S$  increased. The differences in  $R_{RD}/A$  between temperature treatments were relatively small when compared to the differences between plant species (Table 4.3).



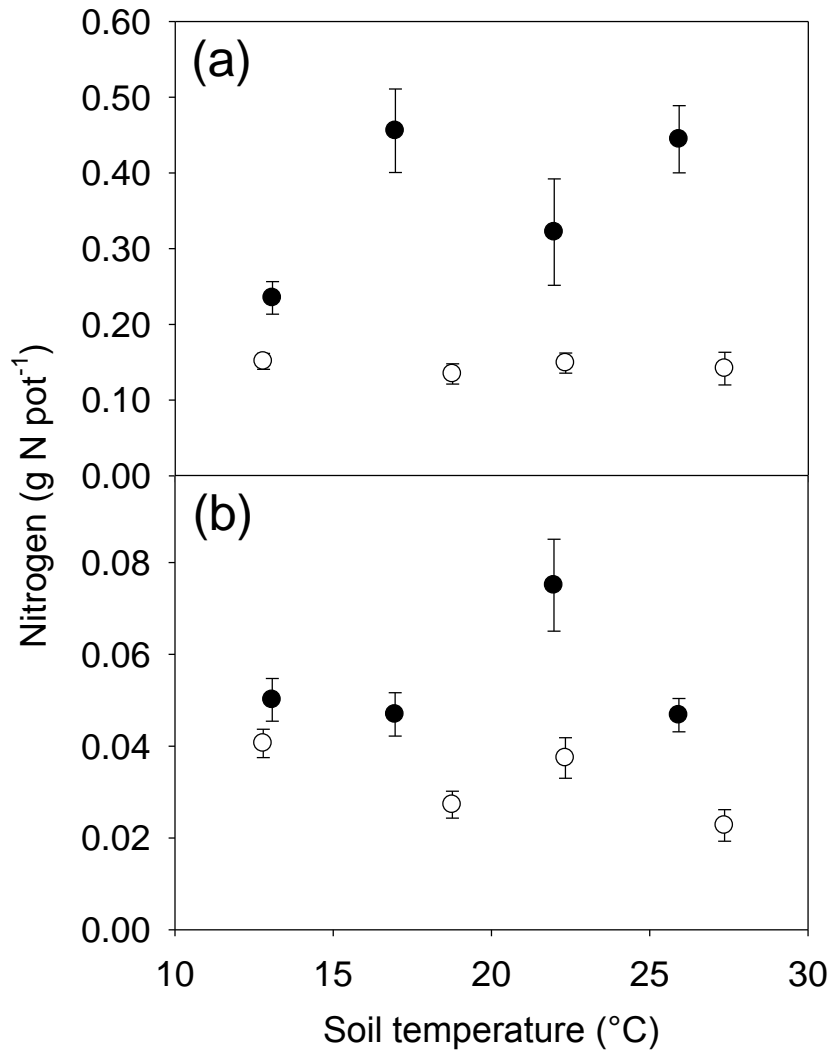
**Figure 4.3** Temperature response of the carbon assimilation rates of ryegrass ( $\circ$ ,  $LF$  soil) and paspalum ( $\bullet$ ,  $HF$  soil). Error bars represent SEM ( $n = 4$ ).

**Table 4.3 Leaf and root biomass per pot measured immediately following the  $R_S$  measurements and the estimated fractions of  $\text{CO}_2$  respired via  $R_{RD}$  per unit weight of net  $\text{CO}_2$  fixed by photosynthesis ( $A$ ). The errors represent SEM ( $n = 4$ ).**

	Leaf biomass	Root biomass	$A$	$R_{RD}$	$R_{RD}/A$
	(g pot <sup>-1</sup> )	(g pot <sup>-1</sup> )	( $\mu\text{g CO}_2$ pot <sup>-1</sup> s <sup>-1</sup> )	( $\mu\text{g CO}_2$ pot <sup>-1</sup> s <sup>-1</sup> )	(%)
<i>LF</i> soil					
10°C	9.0 ± 0.6	3.7 ± 0.2	39 ± 2	1.5 ± 0.1	4.0 ± 0.9
15°C	6.1 ± 0.7	1.6 ± 0.3	36 ± 2	2.6 ± 0.4	7.4 ± 1.8
20°C	8.2 ± 0.8	3.0 ± 0.5	62 ± 4	4.1 ± 0.5	6.6 ± 1.2
25°C	5.7 ± 0.3	1.4 ± 0.2	45 ± 3	3.4 ± 0.6	7.7 ± 1.7
<i>HF</i> soil					
10°C	16.6 ± 1.2	5.5 ± 0.6	30 ± 3	0.9 ± 0.1	3.1 ± 1.3
15°C	27.2 ± 0.7	4.2 ± 0.4	59 ± 6	1.7 ± 0.2	2.8 ± 0.8
20°C	26.9 ± 5.5	7.6 ± 1.0	167 ± 15	2.8 ± 0.6	1.7 ± 0.4
25°C	19.5 ± 2.2	3.6 ± 0.1	185 ± 15	2.5 ± 0.3	1.4 ± 0.3

#### 4.4.5 Herbage sample analysis

Paspalum leaves and roots in the *HF* soil always contained significantly ( $p < 0.01$ ) more N than ryegrass leaves and roots in the *LF* soil (Fig. 4.4a and b). There was no significant trend in leaf or root N related to changes in temperatures for either species.



**Figure 4.4** Total N contents of leaf (a) and root (b) biomass of ryegrass (○, *LF* soil) and paspalum (●, *HF* soil) grown at four temperatures. Error bars are SEM ( $n = 4$  and 6 for the *LF* soil and the *HF* soil, respectively).

## 4.5 Discussion

### 4.5.1 Total soil respiration and $R_{OM}$ with and without plants present

Without plants, greater nutrient (e.g. N and P) and C substrate availability (total C and water soluble C contents, Table 4.1) accounted for significantly larger  $R_{OM}$  in the *HF* soil. Previous work by Cleveland et al. (2006) also showed that soil nutrient availability was positively correlated to  $R_{OM}$  in a tropical rain forest soil. In the two soils, evidently, there was sufficiently available C for  $R_{OM}$  to more than double as  $T_S$  increased from 13 – 27°C. In the presence of plants, the same was true but in the *LF* soil, nearly all C emitted from the soil surface was from the roots i.e.  $R_{RD}$ . Unexpectedly, the  $R_{OM}$  from the *LF* soil surface was constant across the 14°C range of  $T_S$  in the presence of plants. As stated, indicative measurements suggested nutrient and C substrates were limited in the *LF* soil's organic matter. However, growing in the *LF* soil, ryegrass C assimilation rate doubled as  $T_S$  increased from 13 – 27°C. Thus, to meet the 'demand' of increased  $T_S$  on CO<sub>2</sub> production in the *LF* soil, microbes used the increasingly available root-derived C. In the *HF* soil, as  $T_S$  increased, microbes used broadly similar proportions of soil C ( $R_{OM}$ ) and root-derived C ( $R_{RD}$ ). The previous study in this thesis found that, using the *HF* soil, after the removal of roots,  $R_S$  rate halved within 4 d at the  $T_S$  range of 9 – 24°C due to C substrate limitation (Uchida et al., 2010). However, it was also concluded (Uchida et al. 2010) that, in the *HF* soil,  $R_S$  at higher  $T_S$  could remain relatively higher during the period of C substrate limitation, compared to  $R_S$  at lower  $T_S$  because microbes were able to access more recalcitrant C substrate as the temperature increased. The current study concurs with this previous finding as shown in Fig. 4.2b where the rate C respired from the old C pool ( $R_{OM}$ ) increased with increasing temperature. I recognise that the current study was a short-term laboratory based and if this study was performed for a longer period, other factors such as soil microbial adaptation (Bradford et al., 2008) might have played an important role in relation to the temperature response of  $R_{OM}$ . However, I believe that although the current study was performed during a short-term period, the difference between the temperature responses of  $R_{OM}$  with and without plants present, and between the *HF* and *LF* soils, are extremely large and worth noting to improve the future prediction of  $R_S$  in pastoral soils.

Fertility affected  $R_{OM}$  in soils responding to changing  $T_S$ . Heightened interest in the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$  has been motivated by an implied and apparently appealing connection between the sustainability of soil C storage and the global warming. However, under carefully controlled, though short-term conditions, this hypothesis was not supported by *in situ* measurements in the *LF* soil with plants present. The results show that the situation is



more complex because of the effect of  $T_s$  on soil C respiration can also be affected by fertility and not just the ‘availability’ of soil C and root-derived C for microbial utilisation.

Despite the earlier results of chapter 3, a study by Wang et al. (2003) showed that water soluble C contents and  $R_{OM}$  were strongly correlated (linear relationship,  $r^2 = 0.89$ ) based on the comparison of 25 different soils, without plants present. Hence the relationship between the rates of  $R_{OM}$  and soil fertility observed in the current study without plants present, agrees with this earlier work. However, the results with respect to the temperature sensitivities of  $R_{OM}$  in the *LF* and *HF* soils, in the absence of plants, contradict previous work (Bosatta and Ågren, 1999; Hartley and Ineson, 2008; Vanhala et al., 2007) that suggested the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$  was negatively correlated to the microbial availability of C. In the current study, the microbial availability of C was higher in the *HF* soil, when compared to the *LF* soil, based on the fact that  $R_{10}$  in the *HF* soil was higher than the *LF* soil without plants (Fig. 4.1a). However,  $R_{OM}$  in the two soils was equally temperature sensitive in the current study, although more replication might have changed these results because the difference between the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$  in the *LF* and *HF* soils without plants was marginally significant ( $p = 0.06$ , Fig. 4.1a). Hartley and Ineson (2008) showed that, in the absence of plants using a soil from an experimental garden, the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$  was positively related to the recalcitrance of soil organic matter. Vanhala et al. (2007) also showed that the decomposition of soil organic matter formed from recently (less than 5 years old) sown crops was more temperature sensitive than the decomposition of relatively older soil organic matter. However, previously reported studies have compared  $R_{OM}$  from soil organic matter pools of difference recalcitrance in the same soil, whereas the current study compared two soils sampled at two separate sites. Hence, a simple comparison between the current study and previous work may be difficult. The two soils used in the current study not only differed in their nutrient status and water soluble C contents, but also differed in soil types and the history of aboveground species, hence these factors may have influenced the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$  in the absence of plants.

In the presence of plants, the range in the  $E_0$  of  $R_s$  in the *LF* and *HF* soils (Fig. 4.1c) encompassed the previously reported  $E_0$  value obtained from a grazed pastoral soil ( $E_0 = 369.20 \pm 8.50$ ) (Brown et al., 2009). However, there was no statistically significant difference between the previously reported  $E_0$  value and the  $E_0$  values for  $R_s$  obtained in the current study.

The  $\delta^{13}C$  values of the bulk soil-respired  $CO_2$  for the *HF* and *LF* soils (Table 4.2) were similar to the previously reported  $\delta^{13}C$  values of  $C_3$  (-26‰, Balesdent et al., 1987) and  $C_4$  (-14

to -19‰, Nissenbaum and Kaplan, 1972) soils, respectively. The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of the ryegrass and paspalum roots in the current study (Table 4.2) were also similar to the previously reported  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of  $\text{C}_3$  and  $\text{C}_4$  plants, respectively (O'Leary, 1988).

The extremely low temperature sensitivity of  $R_{\text{OM}}$  in the *LF* soil, with plants present (Fig. 4.2a), indicated that soil microbes in the *LF* soil were more likely to preferentially utilise the root-derived C when it was available, as opposed to the bulk soil C (Kelliher et al., 2005a). It was probably because of low microbial availability of soil C in the *LF* soil. Conversely, for the *HF* soil, the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{\text{OM}}$  with plants (Fig. 4.2b) remained high, when compared to  $R_{\text{OM}}$  without plants (Fig. 4.1a). Dijkstra et al. (2006) reported that at an optimum  $T_{\text{S}}$ , the magnitude of the priming effect (the increase in  $R_{\text{OM}}$  when root-derived C was added to soil) was significantly higher in fertile soils (organic farm soils) when compared to less fertile soils (annually cultivated grassland soils) and the results from the current study agree well with this phenomenon. A priming effect occurs only when the microbial biomass increases or when it is activated by the addition of readily available C from plants (Kuzyakov and Bol, 2006). Hence, in the current study,  $R_{\text{OM}}$  in the *LF* soil was potentially suppressed due to a lower availability of soil C, while in the *HF* soil, microbial activity increased and primed more efficiently as a result of increased plant activity as evidenced by enhanced rates of photosynthesis, especially at higher  $T_{\text{S}}$ .

A further explanation for the difference in the temperature sensitivities of  $R_{\text{OM}}$  may have been the soils' N contents. In the current study, the N content in the plant biomass, on a per pot basis, was higher in the *HF* soil (Fig. 4.4). Thus, higher soil N availability in the *HF* soil probably increased the activities of soil enzymes related to  $R_{\text{OM}}$  especially at higher  $T_{\text{S}}$ , resulting in higher temperature sensitivity of  $R_{\text{OM}}$  in the *HF* soil. The positive relationship between soil N availability and  $R_{\text{OM}}$  was previously reported in a herb based ecosystem and in a tropical forest (Manning et al., 2008; Waldrop and Firestone, 2004b).

#### **4.5.2 Root-derived C utilisation and C assimilation rates**

Since the values of  $E_0$  for  $R_{\text{RD}}$  were similar in both soils (Fig. 4.2a and b) and because they were also similar to the value for  $E_0$  that had been determined by Lloyd and Taylor (1994), based on an analysis of  $R_{\text{S}}$  data from a wide range of ecosystems, it can be concluded that the C supply from plants was not limiting  $R_{\text{RD}}$  (Davidson et al., 2006). The results from the current study also agreed with Flanagan and Johnson (2005) who showed that, in a grassland ecosystem, aboveground activity was a good proxy for accounting for the variations in  $R_{\text{RD}}$ . Moyano et al. (2008) also showed that, in a forest ecosystem, microbial rhizosphere

respiration was strongly correlated to photosynthetic activity. However, results from the current study differed from those of Fitter et al. (1998) who reported that root respiration rates from plants adapted to warmer temperatures were more temperature sensitive. I found no increase in the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{RD}$  in paspalum, a  $C_4$  plant which is adapted to a warmer climate, relative to ryegrass ( $C_3$  plant).

The fact that the percentage of  $A$  subsequently respired via  $R_{RD}$  ( $R_{RD}/A$ , Table 4.3) was significantly lower for the paspalum in the *HF* soil compared to the ryegrass in the *LF* soil contradicts previous reports which showed that the percentage of assimilated C lost as  $R_{RD}$  was relatively higher in tropical plants when compared to temperate plants (Lloyd and Farquhar, 1996; Lloyd and Farquhar, 2008). However, in the previous works, tree species were the focus of the studies rather than pasture species, and also the  $R_{RD}/A$  values were estimated at the ecosystem level, rather than on a per pot basis as in the current study. Also, I made some assumptions when determining the C input into the soil from plants (see section 4.3.7) and these might have influenced the current results.

## 4.6 Conclusion

Without plants present,  $R_{OM}$  in the *HF* soil was double that in the *LF* soil. The response of  $R_{OM}$  to a change in  $T_S$  was significant, doubling for a temperature increase of 10° to 20°C, and statistically indistinguishable for the two soils. When plants were grown in the soils  $R_{RD}$  was similarly responsive to  $T_S$ , although  $R_{RD}$  was 4-fold greater for ryegrass plants growing in the *LF* soil. When plants were grown in the *HF* soil and  $T_S$  was doubled (13° to 26°C),  $R_{OM}$  increased 19-fold. However, when plants were grown in the *LF* soil and  $T_S$  was doubled,  $R_{OM}$  remained constant. This was attributed to preferential, microbial utilization of root-derived C and limited availability of soil C. The non-destructive measurement of  $R_{OM}$  with growing plants suggested nutrient and C availabilities regulated the soil's temperature sensitivity. This may not seem to bode well for the prospect of conserving C in highly fertile soils when growing pasture plants under warmer conditions, but recalcitrance of soil C in the low fertility soil seemed potentially promising from this perspective. The results of the current short-term study conducted under controlled conditions warrant further, longer-term study under field conditions.

## Chapter 5

# Effects of bovine urine, plants and temperature on nitrous oxide and carbon dioxide emissions from a low fertility soil

### 5.1 Abstract

Pastoral agriculture involves ruminant animals being fed by year-round grazing. Nitrogen (N) utilisation by ruminants is relatively low, and in urine patches up to 1000 kg ha<sup>-1</sup> of N may be deposited, mostly in the form of urea. This N may be kept in the system through uptake by plants and immobilisation, or lost via ammonia volatilisation, leaching, or gaseous emission to the atmosphere as nitrous oxide (N<sub>2</sub>O), nitric oxide (NO) and dinitrogen (N<sub>2</sub>). These processes can be affected by temperature as can urea hydrolysis that significantly raises the soil pH, depending on the buffering capacity, liberating some of the soil's organic matter by solubilisation. Temperature and carbon substrate availability can also strongly affect carbon dioxide (CO<sub>2</sub>) emissions from soils. I postulated that the response of soil CO<sub>2</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions following bovine urine application would be affected by plants, temperature and soil fertility. Dairy cattle urine was collected near Lincoln, labelled with <sup>15</sup>N, and applied at 590 kg N ha<sup>-1</sup> to a low fertility soil (previously studied in Chapter 4) that came from a dairy farm located about 1000 km north of Lincoln, near Kerikeri. At a soil temperature of 23°C, with and without growing ryegrass plants, the urine application induced a significant increase in the N<sub>2</sub>O emissions that was greater than that at 11°C. At 23°C, with and without plants, 0.7 and 2.2% of the applied N was directly emitted as N<sub>2</sub>O, mostly over a 3 d period of incubation when the soil's water-filled pore space was at 70%. The corresponding recoveries of <sup>15</sup>N were, 0.6 and 1.5%. This suggested the plants had induced an almost 3-fold increase in the emissions and the emitted N<sub>2</sub>O had mostly come from the applied urine. This was thought to have reflected the soil's low N availability. Urine application induced a significant carbon (C) priming effect because, without plants, the net CO<sub>2</sub> emissions (treated minus control) were significantly greater than zero. Thus, in contrast to the N<sub>2</sub>O emissions, enhanced C mineralisation of the soil's organic matter was thought to have accounted for the increased CO<sub>2</sub> emissions. Without plants, urine application induced the CO<sub>2</sub> emissions at 23°C to be 42% greater than that at 11°C. Without a C substrate availability limitation, soil microbial CO<sub>2</sub> emissions at 23°C should have been about 120% greater than that at 11°C. Thus, following urine application to soil at 23°C, the CO<sub>2</sub> emissions were evidently limited by

‘insufficient’ C substrate availability. This was thought to have reflected the soil’s low C quality (WSC and HWSC, Table 4.1). With plants, CO<sub>2</sub> emissions also increased significantly in response to urine application but similarly at the two temperatures. This implied further effects of plant performance on soil CO<sub>2</sub> emissions at different temperatures.

## 5.2 Introduction

Ruminant urine deposition creates a significant nitrogen (N) input to grazed pasture soil ecosystems. The rate of N deposition during a dairy cattle urination event may range from 500 – 1000 kg N ha<sup>-1</sup> (Haynes and Williams, 1993). These high rates of N are in excess of the pasture’s immediate demand and as a result the urine patches contribute significantly to the global nitrous oxide (N<sub>2</sub>O) budget (Oenema et al., 1997). Nitrous oxide is a greenhouse gas with a global warming potential 298 times that of CO<sub>2</sub> over a 100 year time frame, and the atmospheric concentration of N<sub>2</sub>O continues to rise (Forster et al., 2007). Nitrogen oxides (NO<sub>x</sub> = NO + NO<sub>2</sub>) catalytically destroy stratospheric ozone (Crutzen, 1970) and the terrestrial emissions of N<sub>2</sub>O are a significant source of stratospheric NO<sub>x</sub> (Matson and Vitousek, 1990). Hence, Ravishankara et al. (2009) recently showed that N<sub>2</sub>O emission is currently the single most important ozone-depleting gas.

The soil C pool (1580 Gt C) contains approximately twice as much C as the atmospheric C pool (750 Gt C) and it contributes to terrestrial CO<sub>2</sub> production (Schimel, 1995). Soil C substrates available for soil respiration ( $R_s$ ) may comprise the original soil organic matter pool i.e. soil organic C, or recently deposited C such as root exudates i.e. root-derived C, the latter being associated with root and rhizosphere activity (Trumbore, 2000). The decomposition of soil organic C ( $R_{OM}$ ) under urine patches has been shown to be enhanced following urine addition to soils and this phenomenon was interpreted as a urine-induced priming effect (Clough and Kelliher, 2005). Urine-induced priming possibly occurs because of the solubilisation of soil organic matter which is a result of the elevated soil pH that ensues during urea hydrolysis (Sherlock and Goh, 1984). Enhanced pasture production following urine deposition may also lead to greater utilisation of root-derived C ( $R_{RD}$ ) within the urine patch, since increased plant production may increase root exudation per unit volume of soil (Ledgard et al., 1982). Conversely, a short-term (14 d) decrease in root-derived C utilisation, after urine deposition, has also been reported due to the fact that the high soil pH damaged pasture roots (Ambus et al., 2007).

Soil CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes ( $F_{CO_2}$ ) following ruminant urine deposition are a combination of both abiotic processes, such as urea hydrolysis, and biological processes such as  $R_s$  (Follett et al., 2001;

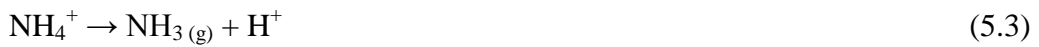
Lovell and Jarvis, 1996). About 70 – 90% of urine-N is urea (Doak, 1952) and urea is rapidly hydrolysed in soils in accordance with eqn. 5.1:



Hydrolysis of the carbonate ions results in an increase in soil pH (eqn. 5.2):



The high pH and presence of ammonium ( $\text{NH}_4^+$ ) ions lead to the creation of ammonia ( $\text{NH}_3$ ) gas (eqn. 5.3) and as this  $\text{NH}_3$  is volatilized a decrease in pH occurs accompanied by the release of  $\text{CO}_2$  according to Avnimelech and Laher (1977) (eqn. 5.4).



Soil temperature ( $T_s$ ) affects the mechanisms responsible for both  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  and  $\text{CO}_2$  production from soils (McKenney et al., 1980; Tiedje, 1988). During a field study, with plants (maize) present in a silty clay soil, an exponential relationship occurred between  $T_s$  and  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  flux, when  $T_s$  ranged from 11° to 26°C (e.g. Song and Zhang, 2009). Soil moisture was not controlled in the study by Song and Zhang (2009), ranging from 24 to 78% WFPS.

With respect to  $R_s$  a 1°C increase in  $T_s$  may increase  $R_s$  by 10% at 10°C (Lloyd and Taylor, 1994) if other factors, such as soil moisture, are not limiting. The response of these  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  and  $\text{CO}_2$  producing processes, to changes in  $T_s$ , may also be influenced by other factors, for instance, an irrigation treatment (10 mm) reduced the relative responses of soil  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  fluxes to  $T_s$  for 7 d, when  $T_s$  ranged from 10° to 20°C (de Klein and Van Logtestijn, 1996). The availability of soil C substrates, supplied from plants, has also been shown to influence the response of  $R_s$  to  $T_s$  (Hartley and Ineson, 2008). Similarly, the previous experiment (Chapter 4) showed that plants and soil nutrient status influenced the response of  $R_s$  to  $T_s$  with plants reducing the response of  $R_s$  to  $T_s$  under low fertility conditions. While under high fertility conditions, as would occur in a urine patch,  $R_s$  was sensitive to  $T_s$  both with and without plants.

Anthropogenically driven climate change is expected to result in an increase in the mean global surface temperature of between 1.8° – 4.0°C (IPCC, 2007a). This could potentially create a positive feedback for both soil  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  and  $\text{CO}_2$  fluxes because an increase in  $T_s$  tends to increase the rate of soil processes (Cox et al., 2000; Smith, 1997). Abdalla et al. (2009) reported that denitrification in grazed pastoral soils (in the absence of plants) was very

sensitive to temperature, with temperature ranging between 10 – 25°C, but they did not document how the temperature responses of soil N<sub>2</sub>O and CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes would be influenced by the presence or absence of either plants or ruminant urine.

Many studies have studied soil N<sub>2</sub>O and CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from urine patches in pastoral ecosystems. For example, Clough et al. (2003) studied both soil N<sub>2</sub>O and CO<sub>2</sub> emissions following a urine addition but this study was performed without plants and at a constant temperature (20°C). However, despite the global significance of anthropogenically induced N<sub>2</sub>O and CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from agriculture and land use change, there are no studies that have compared the soil N<sub>2</sub>O and CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from urine patches with or without plants under varying  $T_s$ . This information is critically important because pastoral ecosystems play an important role in the global C and N cycles and the size and distribution of greenhouse gas sources and sinks remains uncertain (Fowler et al., 1997; Ojima et al., 1993) as does their response to increased  $T_s$  resulting from predicted climate change.

To determine the C sources contributing to the  $F_{CO_2}$  i.e. recently added C from roots and urine ( $R_{RDU}$ ) or recalcitrant C from soil organic matter ( $R_{OM}$ ), and their response to changes in  $T_s$ , a natural <sup>13</sup>C abundance technique was used (Millard et al., 2008; Robinson and Scrimgeour, 1995). This method was based on the difference in the  $\delta^{13}C$  values of the C fixed by C<sub>3</sub> and C<sub>4</sub> plant photosynthetic pathways (O'Leary, 1988). A C<sub>3</sub> perennial ryegrass (*Lolium perenne*) was grown in a soil developed under C<sub>4</sub> vegetation (C<sub>4</sub> soil) with C<sub>3</sub> bovine urine. Similarly to determine the source of the N<sub>2</sub>O-N and the response of the source to changes in  $T_s$  (soil versus urine) the urine was labelled with <sup>15</sup>N-enriched urea, thus enabling the distinction between soil-N and urine-N. The distinction between N<sub>2</sub>O originating from soil-N and from urine-N is important because it is expected that as  $T_s$  increases soil-N mineralization will increase (Kladivko and Keeney, 1987; Stanford et al., 1973). The aim of this study was to investigate the effects of urine application,  $T_s$ , and plants on soil N<sub>2</sub>O and CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes.

## 5.3 Materials and Methods

### 5.3.1 Soil collection and treatment structure

Soil samples (0 – 5 cm depth) were collected from a dairy pasture site at Kerikeri, Northland, New Zealand (35°18'S, 173°93'E, 79 masl). The primary vegetation on the soil was a C<sub>4</sub> Kikuyu grass (*Pennisetum clandestinum* Hochst.) and the soil was a well drained Kerikeri friable clay loam (Typic Haplohumox; Soil Survey Staff, 1998). The Kikuyu grass had been present for > 20 years. Soil samples were sieved to pass through a 5.6 mm mesh, plant root

material was removed, and the soil was stored at  $< 4^{\circ}\text{C}$ . The mean annual  $T_S$  at the sampling site (10 cm depth in years 2006 to 2008) was  $15.0 \pm 1.1^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $\pm$  SD).

Sieved soils were packed to a depth of 10 cm into funnel shaped pots (12 cm deep, 22 cm and 10 cm in diameter on the top and the bottom, respectively). Each pot contained the equivalent of 2200 g dry soil. Soil-C in the sampled soil originated from  $\text{C}_4$  plants and had a mean  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  value of  $-19.6 \pm 0.01\text{‰}$  ( $\pm$  SEM, all  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values are expressed relative to Vienna PeeDee Belemnite;  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{V-PDB}}$ ). Hence to create a  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  gradient between the soil-C and plant-C, a  $\text{C}_3$  perennial ryegrass (*Lolium perenne* L.) was planted. The ryegrass seeds were planted on the edge of each pot (Plate 5.1) and an aluminium collar (7 cm depth and 14 cm in diameter) was inserted into the middle of the soil surface of each pot to allow  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  and  $\text{CO}_2$  flux measuring equipment to be placed (see below). The pots were maintained in a glasshouse at  $20^{\circ}\text{C}$  and were watered every day for 8 – 12 weeks until the ryegrass plants had established (Plate 5.1). Urea fertiliser was applied three times, 1, 3, and 5 weeks following seed germination, during plant establishment ( $60 \text{ kg N ha}^{-1}$  in total as urea) but no fertiliser was applied three weeks immediately prior to treatment application and the subsequent  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  and  $\text{CO}_2$  flux measurements. Pots without plants were also prepared to act as controls and they were also placed in the glasshouse for 8 – 12 weeks and received the same inputs as the planted pots.



**Plate 5.1** Pots with and without ryegrass plants immediately before soil  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  and  $\text{CO}_2$  fluxes were measured. The ryegrass were growing on the edge of each pot and an aluminium collar was inserted to a depth of 5 cm in the middle of the pot.



Pots were then allocated to air temperature treatments, at either 7°, 15° or 20°C which were applied using controlled-environment growth cabinets (PGV36, Controlled Environments Ltd, Winnipeg, Canada), with ambient CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations, a 70% humidity and a 16 h day length. Photosynthetically active radiation (PAR) was measured with a quantum sensor (L190SA; Li-Cor, Inc., Lincoln, NE, USA), giving a maximum midday irradiance of 400  $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$  PAR at the surface of the uppermost leaves. Because of the radiation from the fluorescent tubes and incandescent lamps in the cabinets,  $T_s$  was approximately 3°C higher during soil CO<sub>2</sub> and N<sub>2</sub>O flux measurement periods (between 1 to 3 p.m.), averaging  $10.6 \pm 0.8^\circ$ ,  $18.9 \pm 0.9^\circ$ , and  $23.2 \pm 0.8^\circ\text{C}$  in the cabinet at the air temperature of 7°, 15°, and 20°C, respectively. Hence, from here on, the three treatment temperatures are denoted as 11°, 19°, and 23°C.

The pots were pre-conditioned in the growth cabinets for 7 d at their allocated temperature treatments. Then pots had urine treatments applied. Pots contained either soil with ryegrass plus urine, soil with ryegrass minus urine, soil minus ryegrass plus urine, and soil minus ryegrass minus urine, and these are subsequently referred to as *ryegrass + urine*, *ryegrass control*, *soil + urine*, *soil control*, respectively. Three replicates of each treatment were allocated to each temperature treatments. The experimental design was a split plot design. Three temperature treatments formed the main plots, ryegrass the split plot and urine the split-split plot treatment.

The bovine urine was collected from Friesian dairy cows that had been grazing perennial ryegrass/white clover (*Trifolium repens*) pasture (C<sub>3</sub> plants) at the Lincoln University dairy farm during an afternoon milking. The urine contained  $7.31 \pm 0.05 \text{ g N l}^{-1}$ . Immediately before the urine was applied, the urine was enriched with <sup>15</sup>N using <sup>15</sup>N enriched urea (98 atom % <sup>15</sup>N, Isotec™) to give a final total N concentration of  $7.47 \pm 0.06 \text{ g N l}^{-1}$  with a <sup>15</sup>N enrichment of  $0.996 \pm 0.002 \text{ atom\% } ^{15}\text{N}$ . Then 300 ml (equivalent to 590 kg N ha<sup>-1</sup>) of the urine was applied evenly to the surface of the soils on the *ryegrass + urine* and *soil + urine* pots. The *control* pots received the same volume of deionised water. The soils were then maintained at 50% WFPS for 408 h following the urine application by daily spraying water onto the soil surface (termed ‘moderate moisture phase’) then at 408 h the WFPS was increased to 70% and maintained at this WFPS until the end of the experiment (termed ‘high moisture phase’) which was 672 h following the urine application.

### 5.3.2 Measurement of soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes and <sup>15</sup>N enrichment

Soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes were measured at 24, 48, 72, 120, 192, 240, 288, 360, 432, 456, 504, 552, 600, and 672 h following the urine application. To measure the N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes, a headspace (1.16

l) was created in the centre of each pot using a round plastic canister (PC9603, Milano) which was sealed by filling a trough in the aluminium collar, previously inserted, with water (Plate 5.2). Following checks for linearity of the N<sub>2</sub>O flux, gas samples were taken after 30 minutes. Gas samples (8 ml) were taken from the headspace, via septa inserted in the canister, using a glass gas-tight syringe and placed in 6 ml Exetainers®. The over pressurization avoided the contamination of the sampled gas by ambient air through the septa. Duplicate ambient air samples were also taken and placed in 6 ml Exetainers® at each sampling.



**Plate 5.2 Soil N<sub>2</sub>O flux sampling.** A headspace was created in the centre of each pot using a round plastic canister which was sealed by filling a trough in the aluminium collar, previously inserted, with water. Gas samples were taken from the headspace, via septa inserted in the canister, using a gas-tight syringe.

The 6 ml gas samples were first equilibrated to atmospheric pressure and then analysed for N<sub>2</sub>O using a gas chromatograph (GC; 8610, SRI Instruments, CA), fitted with an electron capture detector, interfaced to a liquid auto sampler (Gilson 222XL, Middleton, WI, USA) which had been adapted to take a purpose-built double concentric injection needle (PDZ-Europa, Crewe, UK). This enabled the entire gas sample to be flushed rapidly from the

Exetainers® into the GC which had a configuration similar to that used by Mosier and Mack (1980).

The  $^{15}\text{N}$  enrichment of the  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N flux was determined by taking 15 ml gas samples at 24, 72, 120, 288, 456, and 672 h following the urine application and placing these in 12 ml Exetainers®. These 12 ml  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  samples were also equilibrated to atmospheric pressure, immediately prior to analysis, and then analysed for  $^{15}\text{N}$  enrichment, using an isotope-ratio mass spectrometer (IRMS; PDZ-Europa 20-20) as described by Steven et al. (1993).

### 5.3.3 Measurement of soil $\text{CO}_2$ fluxes and the calculation of the amount of soil-respired $\text{CO}_2$

Soil  $\text{CO}_2$  fluxes ( $F_{\text{CO}_2}$ ) were measured, every 48 h, using a portable chamber with an infrared gas analyser (SRC-1 and EGM-4, PP systems, Hitchin, UK). The chamber connected directly onto the circular aluminium soil respiration collar placed on each pot and the flux was determined over a 2 min period.

To compare the response of  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  over time ( $h$ , hours after the urine application), the exponential decay model (eqn. 5.5) was fitted to the data by adapting the equation of Kelliher et al. (2007):

$$F_{\text{CO}_2} = a + br^h \quad (5.5)$$

An asymptote is determined by the variable  $a$  ( $\mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$ ),  $b$  is a scaling factor, and  $r$  is the decay constant, related to the decay rate. Significant differences in the parameters between the treatments were obtained using the standard errors of the parameter estimation (see below).

The trapezoidal rule, based on the  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  data plotted versus time, was used to calculate the amount of  $\text{CO}_2$  emitted over the course of the incubation (0 – 672 h following the urine application). For the + *urine* treatments, the initial  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  (at time zero) following the urine treatment was estimated by adding the  $a$  and  $b$  terms of the fitted model (eqn. 5.5). For the *control* treatments,  $R_S$  rate at 0 h was extrapolated to equal the  $R_S$  rate measured at 24 h.

In order to ascertain the potential urine-derived priming effect under the urine treatments, the maximum possible production of  $\text{CO}_2$  from the applied urine was calculated. Based on the C content of the applied urine ( $1.90 \text{ g l}^{-1}$ ) and the volume applied (300 ml) it was calculated that 2.09 g of  $\text{CO}_2$  was the maximum mass of  $\text{CO}_2$  attributable to the urine addition, assuming that

all of the urine-C was released to the atmosphere as CO<sub>2</sub> within 672 h following the urine treatment.

### 5.3.4 The $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ values of soil-respired CO<sub>2</sub>

The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of the soil-respired CO<sub>2</sub> ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{R_s}$ ) were calculated by adapting the method of Ohlsson et al. (2005). This involved sampling a headspace (see above) for soil-respired CO<sub>2</sub> after a period of 30 min, with plants absent. The CO<sub>2</sub> 15 ml gas samples were then placed into 12 ml Exetainers® for  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  determination using IRMS (see above) at 24, 360, and 552 h following the urine treatment. The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{R_s}$  values were calculated using the following equation (Ohlsson et al., 2005) (eqn. 5.6):

$$\delta^{13}\text{C}_{R_s} = \frac{[\text{CO}_2(\text{headspace})] \times \delta^{13}\text{CO}_2(\text{headspace}) - [\text{CO}_2(\text{air})] \times \delta^{13}\text{CO}_2(\text{air})}{[\text{CO}_2(\text{headspace})] - [\text{CO}_2(\text{air})]} \quad (5.6)$$

where [CO<sub>2</sub>(headspace)], [CO<sub>2</sub>(air)],  $\delta^{13}\text{CO}_2(\text{headspace})$  and  $\delta^{13}\text{CO}_2(\text{air})$  are the concentrations of CO<sub>2</sub> in the headspace of the chamber system, the concentration of CO<sub>2</sub> sampled in ambient air, the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  value of the CO<sub>2</sub> in the headspace of the chamber system, and the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  value of CO<sub>2</sub> in ambient air, respectively. The assumption was made that the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values in the ambient air were the same as the initial value of the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  value in the headspace at time zero. Photosynthetic activity and leaf respiration did not influence the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  value of the CO<sub>2</sub> in the headspace of the chamber system because leaves were excluded from the headspace (Plate 5.2).

### 5.3.5 Isotopic analysis of plant and soil and calculation of $R_{\text{OM}}$ and $R_{\text{RDU}}$

In order to measure the contribution of soil organic matter decomposition ( $R_{\text{OM}}$ ) or urine and root-derived C utilisation ( $R_{\text{RDU}}$ ) to total  $R_s$ , the pots were destructively sampled following the last soil N<sub>2</sub>O and CO<sub>2</sub> flux determinations at 672 h. The  $R_{\text{RDU}}$  originated from C fixed by C<sub>3</sub> plants. This estimate of the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}$  value makes the simplifying assumption that the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  value of CO<sub>2</sub> originating from the applied urine-C ( $\delta^{13}\text{C} = -30.7 \pm 0.4\text{‰}$ ) and the root-respired C ( $-29.9 \pm 0.7\text{‰}$ , when averaged across temperature treatment) were equal. Even though this assumption is not strictly valid due to the potential for fractionation of plant-C following harvest by the animal and the subsequent excretion of the urine-C, it is argued here that it is appropriate given that the difference in  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values between urine-C and plant-C was not statistically significant when compared to the difference in the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values between the C<sub>3</sub> plant and C<sub>4</sub> soil ( $-19.6 \pm 0.01\text{‰}$ ). To obtain the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}$  values, the roots in the treatments with plants were carefully removed from the soil, gently washed to remove the soil attached

to the roots, placed in Tedlar® bags, and then flushed with CO<sub>2</sub>-free air. Then the bags containing the roots were incubated for 30 min at the appropriate treatment temperatures. Then 15 ml gas samples were taken and placed into 12 ml Extainers® using a gas-tight syringe via septa embedded on the bags. The CO<sub>2</sub> generated was analysed for  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  using IRMS as described above.

The CO<sub>2</sub> produced during  $R_{\text{OM}}$  originated from C originally fixed by C<sub>4</sub> plants. To obtain the value of  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}$ , a sub-sample of the soil in the *soil control* treatments was placed into separate Tedlar® bags and flushed with CO<sub>2</sub>-free air with gas sampling and analyses performed as described above.

A natural stable isotope ( $^{13}\text{C}$ ) abundance method was used to differentiate the  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  components, based on the approach taken by Lin et al. (1999) where, the proportion of CO<sub>2</sub> originating from the soil organic C pool in the C<sub>4</sub> soil ( $f_{\text{OM}}$ ) was calculated as follows (eqn. 5.7):

$$f_{\text{OM}} = \frac{\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{Rs}} - \delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}}{\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}} - \delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}} \quad (5.7)$$

The variances (i.e. the square of standard errors,  $\sigma$ ) of  $f_{\text{OM}}$  were calculated as described by Phillips and Gregg (2001) (eqn. 5.8):

$$\sigma^2(f_{\text{OM}}) = \frac{1}{(\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}} - \delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDE}})^2} \left[ \sigma^2(\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{Rs}}) + f_{\text{OM}}^2 \times \sigma^2(\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}) + (1 - f_{\text{OM}})^2 \times \sigma^2(\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}) \right] \quad (5.8)$$

where  $\sigma^2(\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{Rs}})$ ,  $\sigma^2(\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}})$ , and  $\sigma^2(\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}})$  represent the variances of  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{Rs}}$ ,  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}$  and  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}$ , respectively. The variance of  $f_{\text{RDU}}$  was also determined by switching the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}$  and  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}$  subscripts in eqn. 5.8.

Separate sub-samples of soil from each pot were also analysed for soil inorganic-N ( $\text{NH}_4^+\text{-N}$  and  $\text{NO}_3^-\text{-N}$ ) concentrations by extracting these with 2 M KCl (1:10) for 1 h, and then filtering (Whatman 42) the extracts prior to colorimetric analysis on an auto-analyser. This had a detection limit for  $\text{NO}_3^-\text{-N}$  and  $\text{NH}_4^+\text{-N}$  of 0.10 and 0.01 mg l<sup>-1</sup>, respectively (Alpkem FS3000 twin channel analyser; application notes P/N A002380 and P/N A002423).

### 5.3.6 Photosynthesis rate measurements and herbage sample analysis

Leaf photosynthesis rates ( $A$ ) were determined using a portable photosynthesis system (LI6400; Li-Cor, Inc. Lincoln, NE, USA), fitted with a leaf chamber, on three occasions; 96 h prior to urine application, and at 240 and 552 h post urine application. Light intensity within

the leaf chamber was the same as the photosynthetically active radiation within the growth chambers, measured with a quantum sensor as described above.

Photosynthetic rates for the whole pot at 552 h were estimated by multiplying  $A$  (per unit leaf area) by the total live leaf area per pot. Pot leaf area was calculated from measured specific leaf mass ( $65 \pm 9 \text{ g m}^{-2}$ ) and total leaf dry weight per pot. This estimate of total  $A$  per pot made the simplifying assumption that all leaves were equally exposed to radiation and microclimate conditions. Even though this assumption is not strictly valid, it is argued that it is appropriate because it is the relative differences between treatments that are important, rather than the absolute rate of C fixation. Estimates of total  $A$  per pot were used to determine the percentage of root- and urine-derived  $\text{CO}_2\text{-C}$  ( $R_{\text{RDU}}$ ) in photosynthetically fixed C.

All plants were harvested immediately after the last soil  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  and  $\text{CO}_2$  flux measurements (672 h). Aboveground and below ground vegetation was dried ( $65^\circ\text{C}$ , 48 h), weighed, and finely ground prior to being analysed for N content and  $^{15}\text{N}$  enrichment using Dumas combustion in conjunction with IRMS. Percentage recovery of  $^{15}\text{N}$  in plant material was determined according to Cabrera and Kissel (1989).

### 5.3.7 Statistical and data analysis

The  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  flux data were transformed ( $\log_{10}(\text{flux} + 1)$ ). Then two-way analysis of variance (ANOVA) was performed on the log transformed  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  flux (GenStat; Lawes Agricultural Trust, Rothamsted, UK) and the  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  data to determine the effect of the urine and ryegrass treatments at a given sampling time, and at each treatment temperature.

For the  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  data, the parameters, obtained from the exponential decay model (eqn. 5.5), were compared based on the standard errors of the parameter estimation. The significance ( $p$  value) of any difference between the measured parameters, divided by the standard error of the difference ( $z$ ), and using standard normal curve areas ( $z > 1.96$  corresponds to  $p < 0.05$ ).

The Lloyd and Taylor model was used to describe the temperature response of  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  (Lloyd and Taylor, 1994). This model is an Arrhenius-type with three parameters (eqn. 5.9). The variable  $R_x$  is  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$ . The  $R_{10}$  is a scale parameter and it equates to  $R_x$  when  $T_s = 10^\circ\text{C}$ . The  $E_0$  (K) is the activation energy divided by the gas constant and the parameter  $T_0$  determines the temperature minimum (K) at which predicted  $R_x$  reaches zero. The  $E_0$ , which determines the temperature sensitivity, was not constrained and neither was  $R_{10}$ , but  $T_0$  was set at 227.13K, as described by Lloyd and Taylor (1994). The same approach was previously used by Mäkiranta

et al. (2009). The two parameters were fitted to the data set using non-linear regression using GenStat (Lawes Agricultural Trust, Rothamsted, UK).

$$R_x = R_{10} e^{E_0 \left( \frac{1}{56.02} - \frac{1}{T_s + 237.15 - T_0} \right)} \quad (5.9)$$

## 5.4 Results

### 5.4.1 Basic information for soil and urine

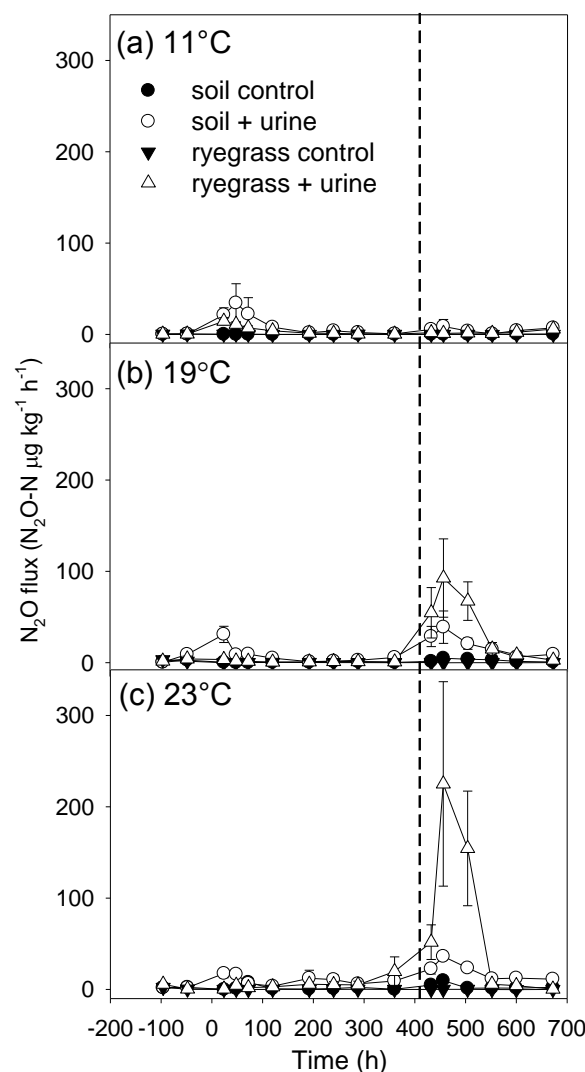
The soil C:N ratio, organic matter, and water soluble C contents were 11.7, 13.3 g kg<sup>-1</sup>, and 161 mg C kg<sup>-1</sup>, respectively. Total C, total N, and atom% <sup>15</sup>N for the soil were 77 mg kg<sup>-1</sup>, 6.6 mg kg<sup>-1</sup> and 0.426 atom% <sup>15</sup>N, respectively. Other soil characteristics are described in the previous chapter (Table 4.1).

### 5.4.2 Soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes over time

Under the moderate moisture phase, soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes increased 24 h after urine application at 19° and 23°C and after 48 h at 11°C, and then N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes declined (Fig. 5.1). Under the moderate moisture phase, the soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes at 24 h were higher ( $p < 0.05$ ) in the *soil + urine* treatment ( $23 \pm 4 \mu\text{g N}_2\text{O-N kg}^{-1} \text{ h}^{-1}$ ) compared to the fluxes from the *ryegrass + urine* treatment ( $6 \pm 2 \mu\text{g N}_2\text{O-N kg}^{-1} \text{ h}^{-1}$ ), when averaged across temperature treatments (Fig. 5.1).

Under the high moisture phase, the highest N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes occurred 48 h after the increase in WFPS (456 h after urine application), when averaged over all temperature treatments (Fig. 5.1). At 48 h after the increase in WFPS, increasing temperature also significantly ( $p < 0.05$ ) increased N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes, when averaged over all urine and plant treatments. Also, at 48 h, urine treatment significantly ( $p < 0.001$ ) increased N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes. When compared to N<sub>2</sub>O flux

peaks under the moderate moisture phase, the N<sub>2</sub>O flux peaks under the high moisture phase were markedly higher ( $p < 0.05$ ). Only under the high moisture phase at 23°C did the presence of ryegrass significantly enhance N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes ( $p < 0.05$ ) (Fig. 5.1c).



**Figure 5.1** The effect of urine and ryegrass on soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes over time (h) at (a) 11°C, (b) 19°C and (c) 23°C. The N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes were measured twice before cow urine application at 0 h. Error bars are the SEM ( $n = 3$ ). The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase in the soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application).



### 5.4.3 Cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O-N

During the moderate moisture phase (0 – 408 h), without urine, cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O-N emissions were not influenced by plant presence, when averaged across temperature treatments. Despite the shorter period of the high moisture phase, at both 19° and 23°C, with urine present, cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O-N emissions were higher ( $p < 0.01$ ), when compared to the cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O-N emissions in the moderate moisture phase (Table 5.1). When urine and plants were present, increasing  $T_s$  increased ( $p < 0.05$ ) cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O-N emissions during the high moisture phase by 2.1 and 4.1-fold at 19° and 23°C, respectively, when compared to cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O emissions without plants. This was reflected in an increase ( $p < 0.05$ ) in the percentage contribution of cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes in the high moisture phase to the total cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes when ryegrass was present (Table 5.1).

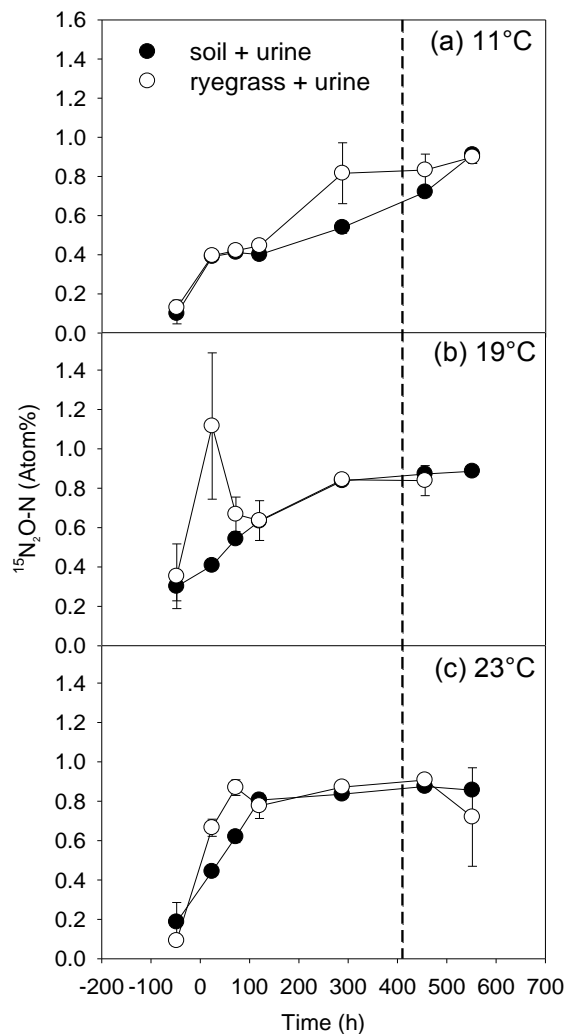
When considering the entire experimental period (672 h) the addition of urine increased ( $p < 0.05$ ) the cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (Table 5.1). The addition of urine and an increase in  $T_s$  from 11° to 23°C increased the cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes by 21000 µg N<sub>2</sub>O-N kg<sup>-1</sup> with plants present. Without plants, the increase was only 4000 µg N<sub>2</sub>O-N kg<sup>-1</sup> when  $T_s$  increased from 11° to 23°C. Without plants, the cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O-N flux as a % of N applied (EF) was not influenced by  $T_s$ , but with plants, EF increased with increasing  $T_s$ . The EF values with plants were significantly higher at 23°C but not at 11° and 19°C, when compared to the EF values without plants.

**Table 5.1 Cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (µg N<sub>2</sub>O-N kg<sup>-1</sup>) for the moderate moisture phase (0 to 408 h), the high moisture phase (408 to 672 h), and the total cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O-N emission (0 to 672 h). The total cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O emission is also expressed as a percentage of the urine-N applied, an emission factor (EF). Errors are ± SEM (*n* = 3). The values in brackets (high moisture phase) are the contribution of cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes in the high moisture phase to the total cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O emissions (%).**

		Cumulative N <sub>2</sub> O emissions (µg N <sub>2</sub> O-N kg <sup>-1</sup> )		
	Treatment	11°C	19°C	23°C
Moderate moisture phase	soil control	34 ± 10	250 ± 97	822 ± 535
	soil + urine	3588 ± 2333	3186 ± 938	4145 ± 1639
	ryegrass control	52 ± 6	58 ± 12	36 ± 11
	ryegrass + urine	1454 ± 384	1796 ± 799	3935 ± 1578
High moisture phase	soil control	53 ± 18 (61%)	694 ± 428 (74%)	758 ± 167 (48%)
	soil + urine	1102 ± 784 (24%)	4215 ± 1371 (57%)	4587 ± 140 (53%)
	ryegrass control	0 ± 4 (5%)	8 ± 0 (13%)	11 ± 1 (24%)
	ryegrass + urine	500 ± 103 (26%)	9079 ± 3113 (83%)	18788 ± 8060 (83%)
Total	soil control	86 ± 24	944 ± 350	1580 ± 698
	soil + urine	4690 ± 3117	7402 ± 1754	8732 ± 1540
	ryegrass control	51 ± 10	67 ± 12	48 ± 11
	ryegrass + urine	1955 ± 296	10876 ± 3838	22744 ± 7230
Total cumulative N <sub>2</sub> O-N / applied urine N (%)	soil + urine	0.45 ± 0.31%	0.63 ± 0.17%	0.70 ± 0.13%
	ryegrass + urine	0.19 ± 0.03%	1.06 ± 0.38%	2.23 ± 0.71%

#### 5.4.4 $^{15}\text{N}$ atom% of $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N and the ratio of $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N derived from urine-N

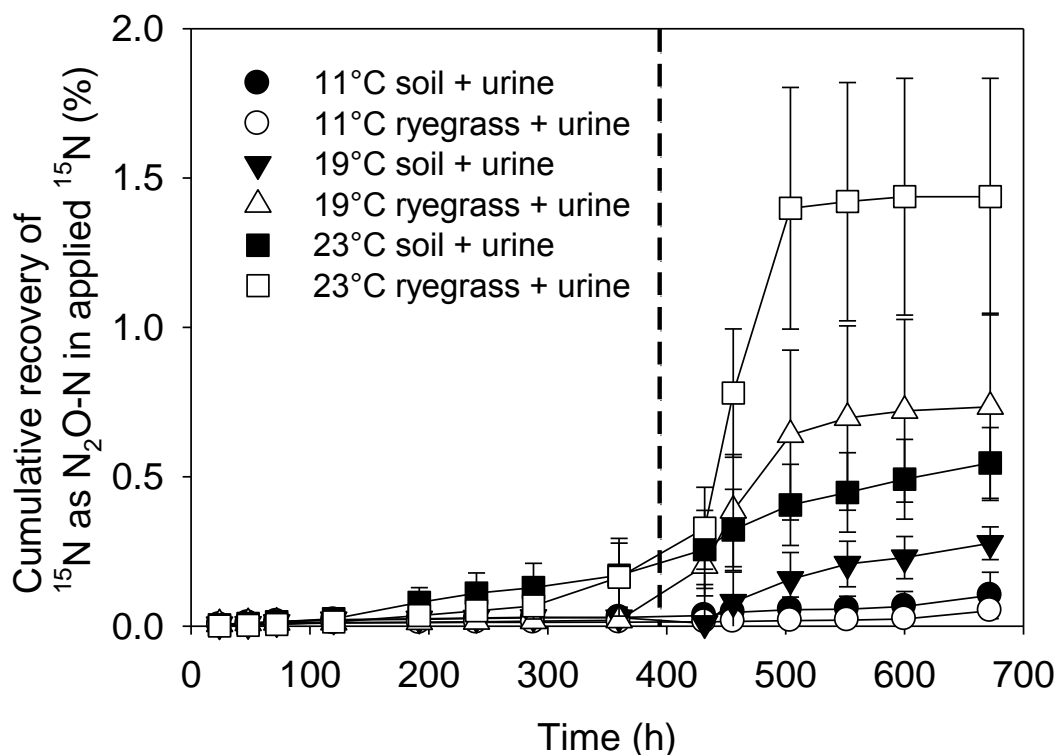
Significant effects occurred due to temperature treatment ( $p < 0.001$ ) and sampling time ( $p < 0.001$ ) with respect to atom%  $^{15}\text{N}$  values of the  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N, with an interaction between these factors ( $p < 0.05$ ). At  $11^\circ\text{C}$ ,  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N atom%  $^{15}\text{N}$  values increased over time, peaking at 552 h; while at  $19^\circ$  and  $23^\circ\text{C}$ , the peak atom%  $^{15}\text{N}$  values occurred at 288 h and 120 h, respectively (Fig. 5.2). Plant presence increased ( $p < 0.05$ ) the  $^{15}\text{N}$  enrichment of the  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N. At  $19^\circ$  and  $23^\circ\text{C}$  this occurred between 0 and 120 h whereas it occurred later at  $11^\circ\text{C}$  at 288 to 456 h. At the last measurement (552 h), atom%  $^{15}\text{N}$  values of  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N averaged  $0.85 \pm 0.05$  atom%  $^{15}\text{N}$ , thus the atom%  $^{15}\text{N}$  values for soil  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N were very close to the value of the applied  $^{15}\text{N}$  (1.00 atom%  $^{15}\text{N}$ ). At 552 h, there were no significant effects of  $T_s$  and plants on the atom%  $^{15}\text{N}$  values of  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N.



**Figure 5.2 Atom%  $^{15}\text{N}$  of  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N fluxes following urine application for (a)  $11^\circ$ , (b)  $19^\circ$  and (c)  $23^\circ\text{C}$  with (○) and without (●) plants over time (h). The errors bars are SEM ( $n = 3$ ). The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase in soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application).**

#### 5.4.5 Nitrogen recovery as nitrous oxide

Cumulative recovery of the applied  $^{15}\text{N}$ , as  $\text{N}_2\text{O-N}$ , varied from  $0.10 \pm 0.08$  to  $1.43 \pm 0.40\%$  after 672 h (Fig. 5.3). Temperature and ryegrass treatments significantly affected this  $^{15}\text{N}$  recovery ( $p < 0.05$ ). At 19° and 23°C, the recovery of applied  $^{15}\text{N}$  was significantly higher when ryegrass was present, while at 11°C there was no significant difference in the recovery of  $^{15}\text{N}$  as  $\text{N}_2\text{O-N}$  due to ryegrass presence.



**Figure 5.3** Cumulative recovery of  $^{15}\text{N}$  applied as  $\text{N}_2\text{O-N}$  over time (h). Error bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ). The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase in the soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application).

#### 5.4.6 Nitrogen contents in soils and plant N uptake

Without urine application, soil  $\text{NO}_3^- \text{-N}$  and  $\text{NH}_4^+ \text{-N}$  concentrations averaged  $3 \pm 1$  and  $47 \pm 9 \mu\text{g g}^{-1}$ , respectively, when averaged across all temperature and plant treatments (data not presented). Without urine application, there were no significant effects of temperature and plant treatments on  $\text{NH}_4^+ \text{-N}$ , but plant presence significantly ( $p < 0.001$ ) reduced  $\text{NO}_3^- \text{-N}$ . Urine application increased ( $p < 0.001$ ) soil inorganic-N concentrations, measured at the end of the experiment, but the  $\text{NH}_4^+ \text{-N}$  concentrations decreased with increasing  $T_s$  with no interaction due to the plant treatment (Table 5.2). Soil  $\text{NO}_3^- \text{-N}$  concentrations decreased ( $p <$

0.05) with increasing  $T_S$  and the presence of plants did not have effect on soil  $\text{NO}_3^-$ -N content at 11° and 19°C (Table 5.2). However, at 23°C, the  $\text{NO}_3^-$ -N concentration in the *soil + urine* treatment was higher ( $p < 0.05$ ) than in the *ryegrass + urine* treatment (Table 5.2).

**Table 5.2 Soil  $\text{NH}_4^+$ -N and  $\text{NO}_3^-$ -N concentrations ( $\mu\text{g N g}^{-1}$  soil) measured at 672 h following urine treatment. Errors bars are SEM ( $n = 3$ ).**

Soil Temperature	Vegetation	$\text{NH}_4^+$	$\text{NO}_3^-$
11°C	soil + urine	11617 $\pm$ 1444	1192 $\pm$ 183
	ryegrass + urine	11583 $\pm$ 328	1372 $\pm$ 372
19°C	soil + urine	240 $\pm$ 56	1323 $\pm$ 511
	ryegrass + urine	347 $\pm$ 45	663 $\pm$ 158
23°C	soil + urine	132 $\pm$ 29	616 $\pm$ 37
	ryegrass + urine	142 $\pm$ 12	400 $\pm$ 13

The N contents of the leaf and root biomass in the *ryegrass + urine* treatments were higher ( $p < 0.001$ ) than in the *ryegrass control* treatments (Table 5.3 and 5.4). Temperature treatment had no significant effect on leaf N contents in the *ryegrass + urine* treatments but increasing  $T_S$  increased ( $p < 0.01$ ) atom%  $^{15}\text{N}$  enrichment and  $^{15}\text{N}$  recovery in the leaf (Table 5.4). In the *ryegrass + urine* treatment, the N concentrations in the root tissue were lower than in the leaves, with increasing  $T_S$  reducing ( $p < 0.05$ ) the N concentration in the roots but increasing ( $p < 0.05$ ) the percentage of added  $^{15}\text{N}$  recovered in the roots (Table 5.4).

**Table 5.3 Leaf and root %N contents at the end of the experiment (672 h following the urine treatment) for the *ryegrass control* pots. Error bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ).**

Soil Temperature	Vegetation	Leaf	Root
11°C	ryegrass control	2.33 $\pm$ 0.08	1.01 $\pm$ 0.07
19°C	ryegrass control	1.45 $\pm$ 0.05	0.66 $\pm$ 0.03
23°C	ryegrass control	1.37 $\pm$ 0.08	0.65 $\pm$ 0.08

**Table 5.4 Ryegrass leaf and root N contents, atom%  $^{15}\text{N}$  enrichments and  $^{15}\text{N}$  recoveries (%) for the *ryegrass + urine* pots. Errors are SEM ( $n = 3$ ).**

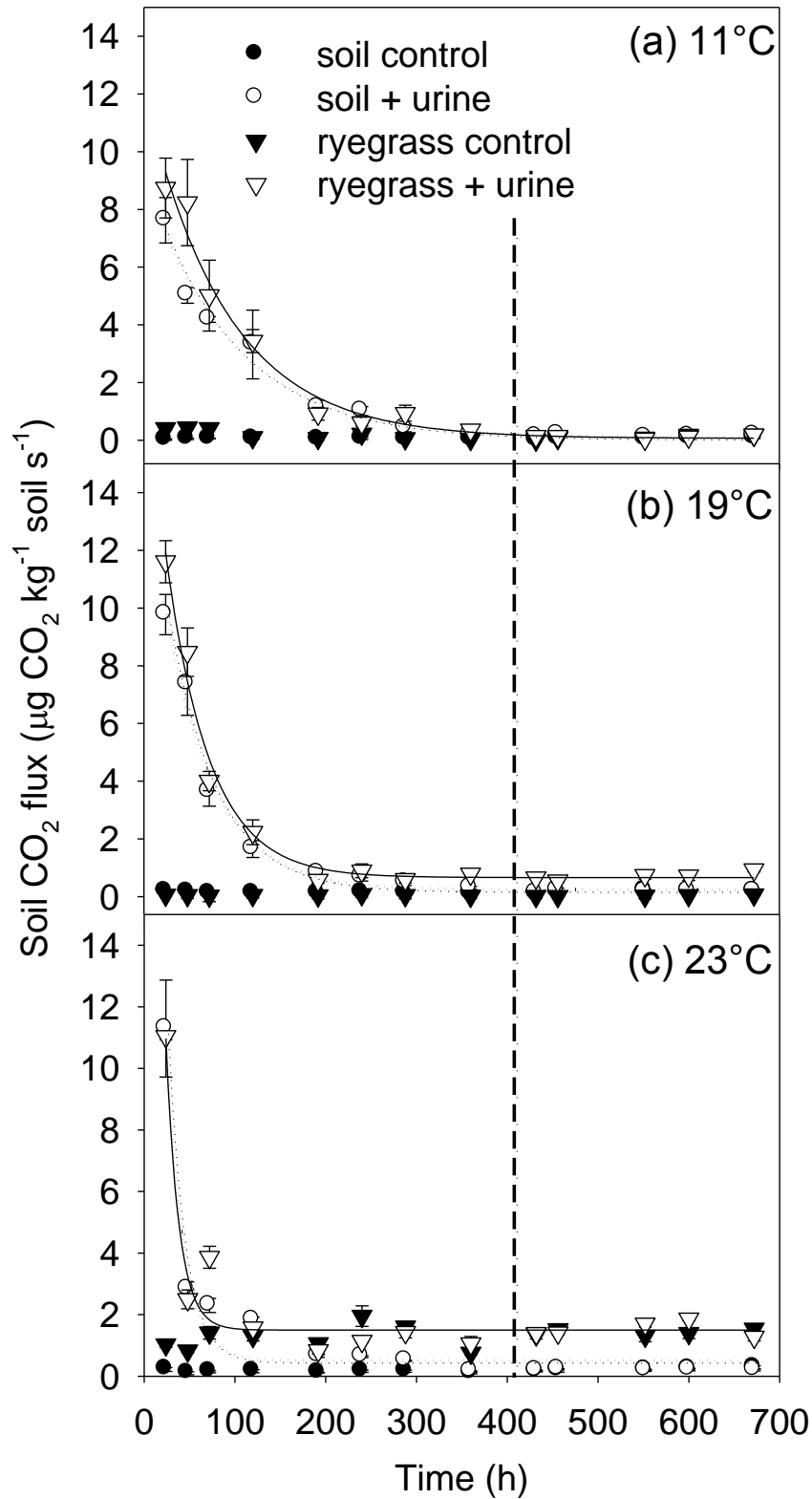
Soil Temperature	Vegetation	Leaf			Root		
		N content %	Atom% $^{15}\text{N}$	Recovery % $^{15}\text{N}$	N content %	Atom% $^{15}\text{N}$	Recovery % $^{15}\text{N}$
11°C	ryegrass + urine	4.38 ± 0.20	0.648 ± 0.031	1.45 ± 0.52	1.98 ± 0.22	0.613 ± 0.068	0.18 ± 0.11
19°C	ryegrass + urine	4.70 ± 0.11	0.798 ± 0.001	6.43 ± 0.57	1.22 ± 0.02	0.684 ± 0.007	0.58 ± 0.14
23°C	ryegrass + urine	4.64 ± 0.11	0.812 ± 0.005	5.08 ± 0.52	1.28 ± 0.06	0.702 ± 0.009	0.88 ± 0.14
Significance		ns	**	**	*	ns	*

Significance refers to the comparison between the temperature treatments. \*\* $p < 0.01$ ; \* $p < 0.05$ ; ns (not significant)

#### 5.4.7 Soil carbon dioxide fluxes over time

The change in soil moisture contents did not influence the soil CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes ( $F_{\text{CO}_2}$ ) thus, the effects of soil moisture on  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  are not considered hereafter. Within 24 h of urine application  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  increased from  $0.5 \pm 0.1$  to  $10.0 \pm 0.5$  CO<sub>2</sub> kg<sup>-1</sup> s<sup>-1</sup>, when averaged across all temperature and ryegrass treatments ( $\pm$  SEM, Fig. 5.4). This increase ( $p < 0.05$ ) in  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$ , as a result of urine application, continued until 432 h at 11°C, 192 h at 19°C but only for 120 h at 23°C (Fig. 5.4). The relationship between this period of enhanced  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  and the accompanying temperature treatment was linear ( $r^2 = 0.98$ ). The fitted model describing the changes in  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  over time (eqn. 5.5), showed the  $r$  values decreased ( $p < 0.001$ ) when  $T_s$  increased from 11° to 23°C (Table 5.5). The  $a$  values only increased significantly with  $T_s$  when ryegrass was present (Table 5.5). The  $b$  values were proportional to  $T_s$ .

There was an Arrhenius relationship between the initial  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  response ( $a + b$ ) to urine application and  $T_s$  (Fig. 5.5a). The temperature responses of the initial  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  were not influenced by the ryegrass treatment. By 672 h after urine application, the effect of urine on  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  had abated and was replaced by a ryegrass treatment effect with an Arrhenius relationship between  $T_s$  and  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  with plants (Fig. 5.5b). When compared to the parameters for the Lloyd and Taylor model fitted to the  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  data, for the immediate response of  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  following urine application (Fig. 5.5a), the parameter  $R_{10}$  at 672 h was smaller but the parameter  $E_0$  at 672 h was not significantly different (Fig. 5.5b).



**Figure 5.4** The effect of urine and ryegrass treatments on soil CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes ( $\mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$ ) at (a) 11°C, (b) 19°C and (c) 23°C. Values are means ( $n = 3$ ) and error bars represent SEM. The fitted solid and dotted lines represent the exponential decay model (eqn. 5.5) fitted to the data for the *ryegrass + urine* and *soil + urine* treatments, respectively. The parameters for the models were described in Table 5.5. The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase of the soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application).



**Table 5.5** The estimated parameters and their standard errors for the time response model (eqn. 5.5) for  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  following urine treatment. The errors are the standard errors of the parameter estimation.

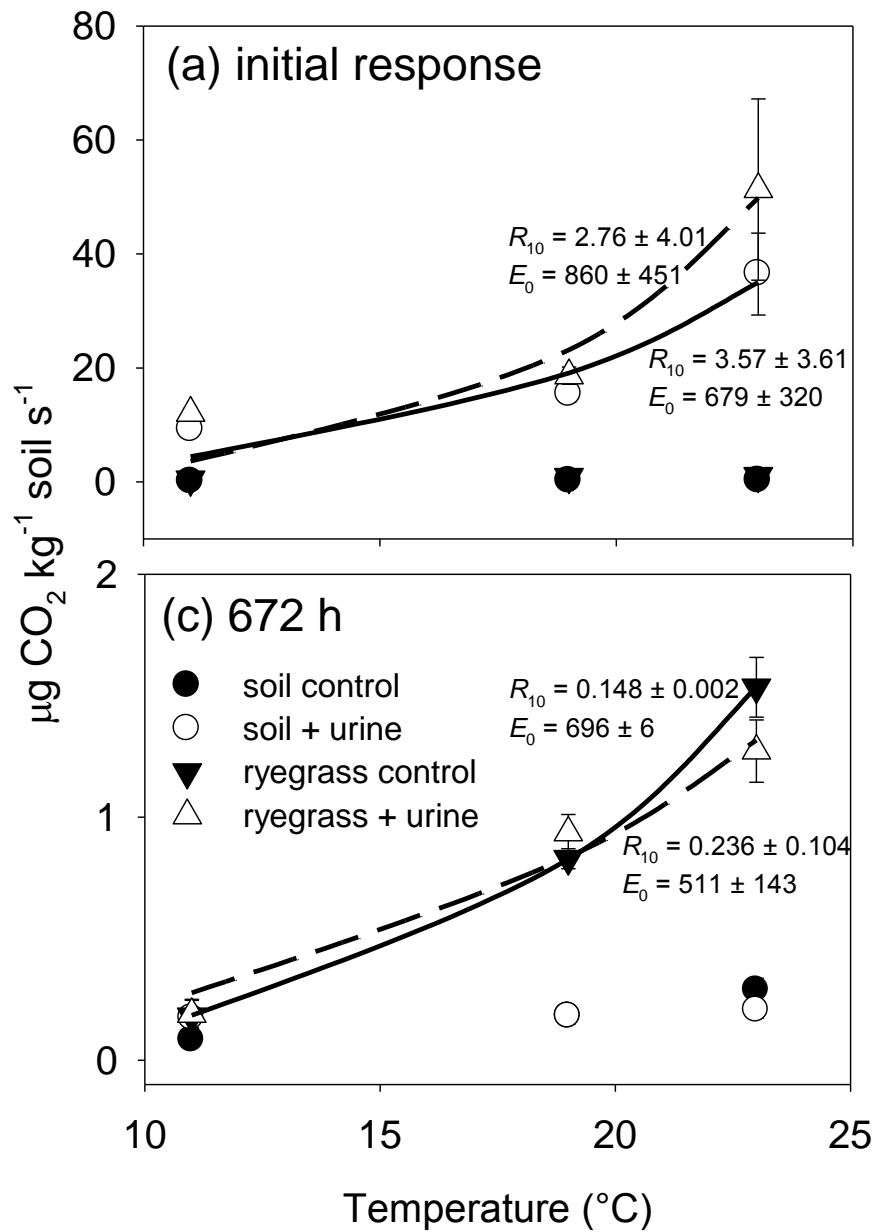
11°C				
	<i>soil + urine</i>		<i>Ryegrass + urine</i>	
Parameter	Estimate	s.e.	Estimate	s.e.
<i>R</i>	0.990	± 0.0017	0.989	± 0.0014
<i>B</i>	9.18	± 0.77	12.07	± 0.81
<i>A</i>	0.10	± 0.23	0.07	± 0.22

19°C				
	<i>soil + urine</i>		<i>Ryegrass + urine</i>	
Parameter	Estimate	s.e.	Estimate	s.e.
<i>R</i>	0.981	± 0.0022	0.979	± 0.0022
<i>B</i>	15.36	± 1.33	18.64	± 1.51
<i>A</i>	0.25	± 0.18	0.66	± 0.18

23°C				
	<i>soil + urine</i>		<i>Ryegrass + urine</i>	
Parameter	Estimate	s.e.	Estimate	s.e.
<i>R</i>	0.948	± 0.0067	0.932	± 0.0116
<i>B</i>	38.68	± 7.09	51.30	± 15.90
<i>A</i>	0.51	± 0.16	1.50	± 0.16



**Figure 5.5** Soil  $\text{CO}_2$  fluxes ( $F_{\text{CO}_2}$ ) as a function of temperature (a) at the initial peak immediately following the urine treatment and (b) at 672 h following the urine treatment. Bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ). Solid and dashed lines represent the best Lloyd and Taylor (1994) model fitted to *soil + urine* and *ryegrass + urine* treatments (a), and *ryegrass control* and *ryegrass + urine* treatments (b). The parameters ( $E_0$  and  $R_{10}$ ) are next to the corresponding curves, with the standard errors of the parameters.

#### 5.4.8 Cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> production from soil respiration and abiotic processes

Urine treatment markedly increased cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> production from  $R_S$  and abiotic processes (e.g. urea hydrolysis) (Table 5.6). With ryegrass, cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> production increased, when compared to cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> production without ryegrass ( $p < 0.001$ ). Increasing  $T_S$  also resulted in increases ( $p < 0.001$ ) in cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> production. An interaction ( $p < 0.001$ ) occurred between temperature and ryegrass treatments with cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> production increasing 2.2-fold when  $T_S$  increased from 11° to 23°C with plants, whereas it was only 1.3-fold without ryegrass, when averaged over the urine treatment.

After subtracting the maximum potential urine-derived CO<sub>2</sub> flux (see above) from the cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> flux it was observed that the cumulative  $R_S$  ( $p < 0.001$ ) was higher under the urine application when compared to the *control* treatments. Without plants, the urine treatment effect was 40% greater at 23°C than at 11°C (Table 5.6(d)). With plants, the urine treatment effect (Table 5.6(d)) was not affected by  $T_S$  but urine treatment increased  $R_S$  1.48 g CO<sub>2</sub> kg<sup>-1</sup> over the course of study, when averaged across temperature treatments. This increase in cumulative  $R_S$ , due to the urine application, was interpreted as urine-induced priming. In Table 5.6(e), the magnitude of the urine-induced priming is expressed as a percentage of the cumulative  $R_S$  from the + *urine* treatment divided by the cumulative  $R_S$  from the *control* treatment in the comparable ryegrass and temperature treatments. Decreasing  $T_S$  increased ( $p < 0.05$ ) the magnitude of the urine-induced priming effect but urine-induced priming decreased ( $p < 0.05$ ) with plants present at 19° and 23°C, but not at 11°C. When the urine-induced priming effect based on soil weight (Table 5.6) was normalized using leaf biomass (Table 5.8), the urine-induced priming effect, with plants, was  $1134 \pm 363$ ,  $141 \pm 16$ , and  $109 \pm 11\%$  at 11°, 19°, and 23°C. Thus, when compared to the calculated urine-induced priming effect based on soil weight (Table 5.6), the magnitude of the urine-induced priming effect based on leaf biomass was smaller. However, the urine-induced priming effect was still clearly observed at 11° and 19°C when plants were present.

**Table 5.6 (a) Total cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> flux ( $R_s$  plus urine derived abiotic CO<sub>2</sub> production) and (b) CO<sub>2</sub> production due to  $R_s$  (cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> flux minus urine derived CO<sub>2</sub> flux) over the course of study (672 h). In the + *urine* treatments, the amount of CO<sub>2</sub> emitted from (a) total cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> flux was calculated first and then the amount of CO<sub>2</sub> emitted from urea hydrolysis (2.09 g CO<sub>2</sub> kg<sup>-1</sup> soil) was deducted to obtain (b) the flux due to  $R_s$ . The urine application effect (b – c) is shown in (d). The relative increase in  $R_s$  due to a urine application when compared to (c) cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> flux in the *control* treatments i.e. the urine induced priming is shown as a percentage (e). The errors indicate SEM ( $n = 3$ ).**

Temperature	Ryegrass treatment	(a) Total cumulative CO <sub>2</sub> flux in + <i>urine</i> pots ( $R_s$ + abiotic)	(b) Cumulative CO <sub>2</sub> flux from $R_s$ in + <i>urine</i> pots (a – 2.09 g CO <sub>2</sub> kg <sup>-1</sup> )	(c) Cumulative CO <sub>2</sub> flux from $R_s$ in <i>control</i> pots	(d) Urine application effect (b – c)	(e) Magnitude of urine-induced priming (b/c, %)
g CO <sub>2</sub> kg <sup>-1</sup> soil						
11°C	Soil	3.45 ± 0.32	1.36 ± 0.32	0.11 ± 0.04	1.25 ± 0.32	1236 ± 535%
	Ryegrass	4.10 ± 0.47	2.01 ± 0.47	0.35 ± 0.07	1.66 ± 0.48	574 ± 177%
19°C	Soil	3.63 ± 0.22	1.54 ± 0.22	0.34 ± 0.06	1.20 ± 0.23	453 ± 103%
	Ryegrass	4.88 ± 0.12	2.79 ± 0.12	1.56 ± 0.14	1.23 ± 0.18	179 ± 18%
23°C	Soil	4.20 ± 0.17	2.11 ± 0.17	0.42 ± 0.03	1.69 ± 0.17	502 ± 54%
	Ryegrass	6.81 ± 0.11	4.72 ± 0.11	3.18 ± 0.03	1.54 ± 0.11	148 ± 4%

#### 5.4.9 The $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ values of soil-respired C and the sources of soil respiration

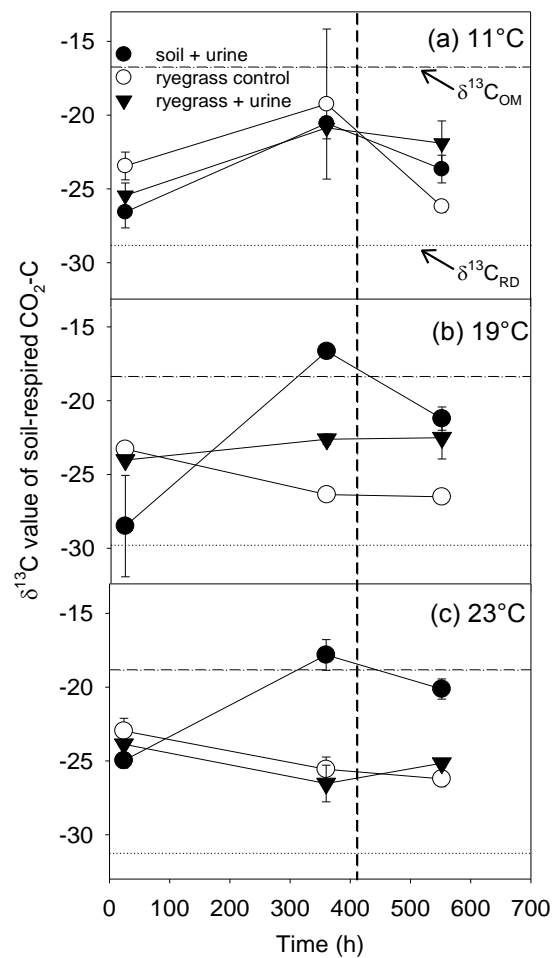
The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of  $\text{CO}_2$  respired from the *soil control* treatment ( $\text{C}_4$  soil,  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}$ ) and of root-respired  $\text{CO}_2$  ( $\text{C}_3$  plant,  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RD}}$ ) are listed in Table 5.7. Temperature treatment had no effect on the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of either  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}$  or  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}$ . The mixing model (eqn. 5.7) was applied to the *soil + urine*, *ryegrass control*, and *ryegrass + urine* treatments to determine the relative fractions of the C pool sources in the  $\text{CO}_2$  fluxes.

**Table 5.7** The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  signatures obtained from the end members. The values for  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}$  and  $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}$  originated with  $\text{CO}_2$  produced from plant roots and the *soil control* pots, respectively. The errors are SEM ( $n = 3$ ).

Temperature	$\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}$	$\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}$
11°C	-16.74 $\pm$ 0.72	-28.80 $\pm$ 0.51
19°C	-18.36 $\pm$ 0.37	-29.77 $\pm$ 0.72
23°C	-18.82 $\pm$ 0.41	-31.23 $\pm$ 0.23
significance	ns	ns

Significance refers to the comparison between the temperature treatments. \*\* $p < 0.01$ ; \* $p < 0.05$ ; <sup>ns</sup> (not significant).

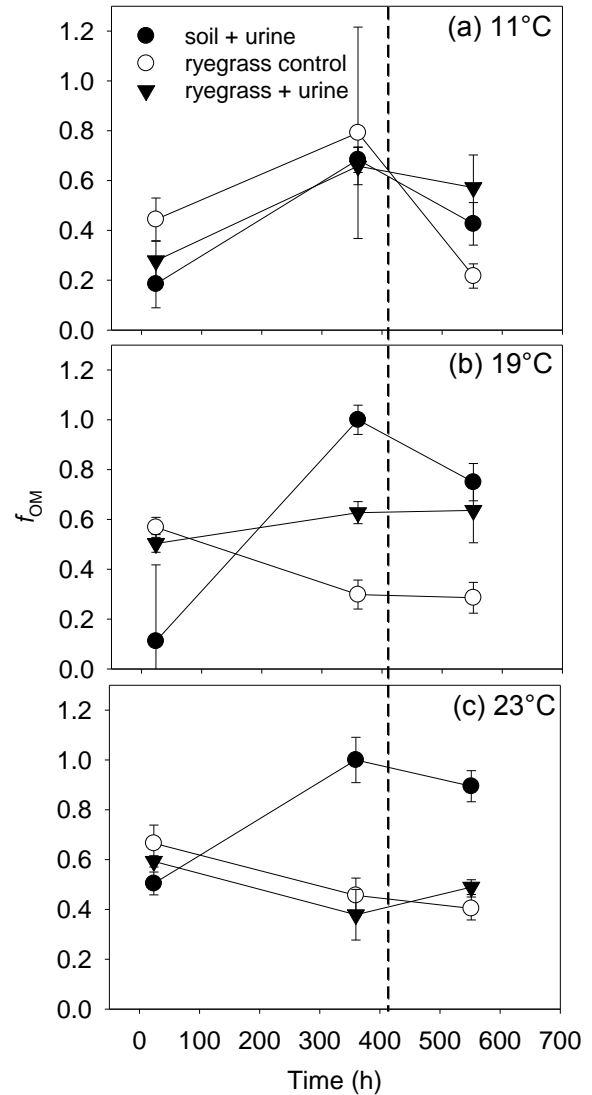
At 11°C, there were no significant effects of urine or ryegrass treatments on the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of soil-respired C at any sampling time (Fig. 5.6a). At 19°C, the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values in the *ryegrass + urine* treatments were more enriched ( $p < 0.05$ ) than the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of the *ryegrass control* treatments at 360 and 552 h, respectively (Fig. 5.6b). The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of the *soil + urine* treatment at 19°C were more enriched ( $p < 0.05$ ) than the *ryegrass + urine* treatment at 360 h. At 23°C, there was no significant difference between treatments at 24 h, but at 360 and 552 h, the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of the soil-respired C in the *soil + urine* treatment were more enriched ( $p < 0.01$ ) than in the *ryegrass control* and *ryegrass + urine* treatments (Fig. 5.6c). At 23°C, there was no significant difference between the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of soil-respired C in the *ryegrass control* and *ryegrass + urine* treatments at any time.



**Figure 5.6** The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of soil-respired  $\text{CO}_2$  over time. Error bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ). The horizontal dashed and dotted lines represent the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of soil organic matter C ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}$ ) and of root-respired  $\text{CO}_2$  ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}$ ), respectively (see Table 5.7). The lines were shown on the figures to indicate the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of the two potential contributing sources of the  $\text{CO}_2$  flux. The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase of the soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application).

The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values used to calculate the contribution of soil organic matter decomposition to  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  ( $f_{\text{OM}}$ ) are shown in Table 5.7. Overall, there were significant effects of sampling time ( $p < 0.001$ ), temperature ( $p < 0.01$ ), ryegrass ( $p < 0.001$ ), and urine treatments ( $p < 0.001$ ) on the  $f_{\text{OM}}$  values (Fig. 5.7). At 11°C, the  $f_{\text{OM}}$  values changed over time, increasing ( $p < 0.05$ ) from 24 h to 360 h prior to decreasing again at 552 h (Fig. 5.7a). Ryegrass and urine treatments had no statistically significant effect on the  $f_{\text{OM}}$  values at 11°C. At 19°C, the  $f_{\text{OM}}$  values were low at 24 h before increasing to dominate the  $\text{CO}_2$  flux by 360 h ( $p < 0.05$ ), before they too declined at 552 h, in the *soil + urine* treatment (Fig. 5.7b). In the *ryegrass control* treatment at 19°C the  $f_{\text{OM}}$  values decreased ( $p < 0.05$ ) from a value of approximately 0.6 at 24 h to a value of approximately 0.3 at 360 and 552 h (Fig. 5.7b). The  $f_{\text{OM}}$  values were relatively constant over time for the *ryegrass + urine* treatment at 19°C (Fig. 5.7b). At 23°C in the *soil + urine* treatments the  $f_{\text{OM}}$  values increased between 24 and 360 h and followed the trend seen at 19°C (Fig. 5.7c). The *ryegrass + urine* and *ryegrass control* treatments also showed the same trends, with comparable values, as at 19°C, with the  $f_{\text{OM}}$  values decreasing over time in the *ryegrass*

*control* and remaining relatively constant in the *ryegrass + urine* treatment (Fig. 5.7c).



**Figure 5.7** The effect of urine and ryegrass treatments on  $f_{\text{OM}}$  over time (h) at (a) 11°C, (b) 19°C and (c) 23°C. The error bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ). The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase of the soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application).

The  $R_{OM}$  rates with plants ( $R_S$  minus  $R_{RDU}$ ), calculated based on the  $f_{OM}$  (Fig. 5.7) and  $R_S$  values (Fig. 5.4), showed that at 360 and 552 h,  $R_{OM}$  in the *ryegrass* + *urine* treatment was consistently higher than  $R_{OM}$  in the *ryegrass control* treatment at all the temperature treatments (Table 5.8). However, the magnitude of the priming effect on  $R_{OM}$  in the *ryegrass* + *urine* treatment was significantly higher than in the *ryegrass control* treatment only at 11°C 360 h and 23°C 552 h (Table 5.8).

Table 5.6 presents the estimation of  $R_S$  without urine derived abiotic  $CO_2$  production. However, with plants present,  $R_S$  can further be separated into  $R_{OM}$  and root-derived respiration ( $R_{RD}$ ), hence the comparison of  $R_S$  without plants ( $R_{OM}$  only) and  $R_S$  with plants ( $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$ ) would be difficult if only the data in Table 5.6 was available. Hence, Table 5.8 shows the estimated  $R_{OM}$  values with plants present ( $R_S$  minus  $R_{RD}$  and urine derived abiotic  $CO_2$  production) and it makes possible the direct comparison of ‘ $R_{OM}$  with plants’ and ‘ $R_{OM}$  without plants’. However, the values in Table 5.6 are based on the cumulative  $CO_2$  flux throughout the experimental period (0 – 672 h), whereas the values in Table 5.8 are based on the  $CO_2$  fluxes at particular times during the experiment (360 and 552 h).

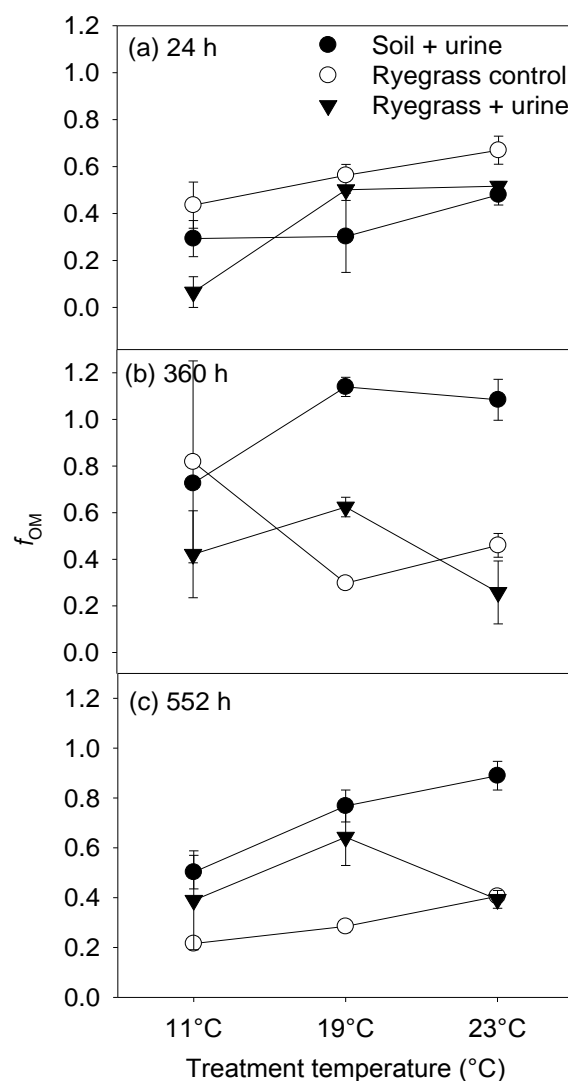


**Table 5.8** The magnitude of priming effect on  $R_{OM}$  induced by (d) ryegrass presence and (e) ryegrass + urine presence at 360 and 552 h following urine application calculated based on  $R_{OM}$  in the (a) *soil control*, (b) *ryegrass control*, and (c) *ryegrass + urine* treatments. The  $R_{OM}$  rates were calculated from the fraction of  $R_{OM}$  contributing to  $R_S$  ( $f_{OM}$ , Fig. 5.7), and the measured  $R_S$  rates (Fig. 5.4). The error bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ).

		$R_{OM}$ ( $\mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$ )			Magnitude of priming effect (%)	
		(a) soil control	(b) ryegrass control	(c) ryegrass + urine	(d) Priming induced with ryegrass present, (b)/(a)	(e) Priming induced with ryegrass and urine present (c)/(a)
11°C	360 h	0.03 $\pm$ 0.01	0.03 $\pm$ 0.02	0.24 $\pm$ 0.08	99 $\pm$ 58%	724 $\pm$ 303% *
	552 h	0.03 $\pm$ 0.02	0.02 $\pm$ 0.00	0.03 $\pm$ 0.01	54 $\pm$ 31%	86 $\pm$ 61% <sup>ns</sup>
19°C	360 h	0.10 $\pm$ 0.04	0.10 $\pm$ 0.03	0.49 $\pm$ 0.07	100 $\pm$ 51%	502 $\pm$ 228% <sup>ns</sup>
	552 h	0.22 $\pm$ 0.04	0.23 $\pm$ 0.03	0.47 $\pm$ 0.08	104 $\pm$ 22%	212 $\pm$ 51% <sup>ns</sup>
23°C	360 h	0.10 $\pm$ 0.02	0.34 $\pm$ 0.03	0.40 $\pm$ 0.09	350 $\pm$ 91%	407 $\pm$ 136% <sup>ns</sup>
	552 h	0.21 $\pm$ 0.02	0.53 $\pm$ 0.07	0.83 $\pm$ 0.05	257 $\pm$ 45%	405 $\pm$ 49% *

Significance refers to the differences between (d) and (e). \*\* $p < 0.01$ ; \* $p < 0.05$ ; ns (not significant)

At 24 h, increasing  $T_S$  significantly ( $p < 0.001$ ) increased the  $f_{OM}$  values, when averaged across ryegrass and urine treatments (Fig. 5.8a). The  $f_{OM}$  values for the *ryegrass control* treatment were higher ( $p < 0.01$ ) than the values for the *ryegrass + urine* and *soil + urine* treatments at 24 h (Fig. 5.8a). At 360 h, there was no significant effect of temperature treatment when values were averaged across treatments (Fig. 5.8b). However, the *soil + urine* treatment had higher ( $p < 0.01$ )  $f_{OM}$  values when compared to the values for the *ryegrass + urine* and *ryegrass control* treatments at 360 h (Fig. 5.9b). At 552 h, there were significant ( $p < 0.05$ ) effects of temperature, ryegrass and urine treatments. Increasing temperature increased the  $f_{OM}$  values, at 552 h, for the *soil + urine* and *ryegrass control* treatments. The *soil + urine* treatment again had a significantly ( $p < 0.01$ ) higher  $f_{OM}$  value when compared to the values for the *ryegrass control* treatment at 552 h but the difference was smaller than 360 h (Fig. 5.8c). The *soil + urine* treatment also had a significantly ( $p < 0.01$ ) higher  $f_{OM}$  value when compared to the values for the *ryegrass + urine* treatment at 552 h (Fig. 5.8c).



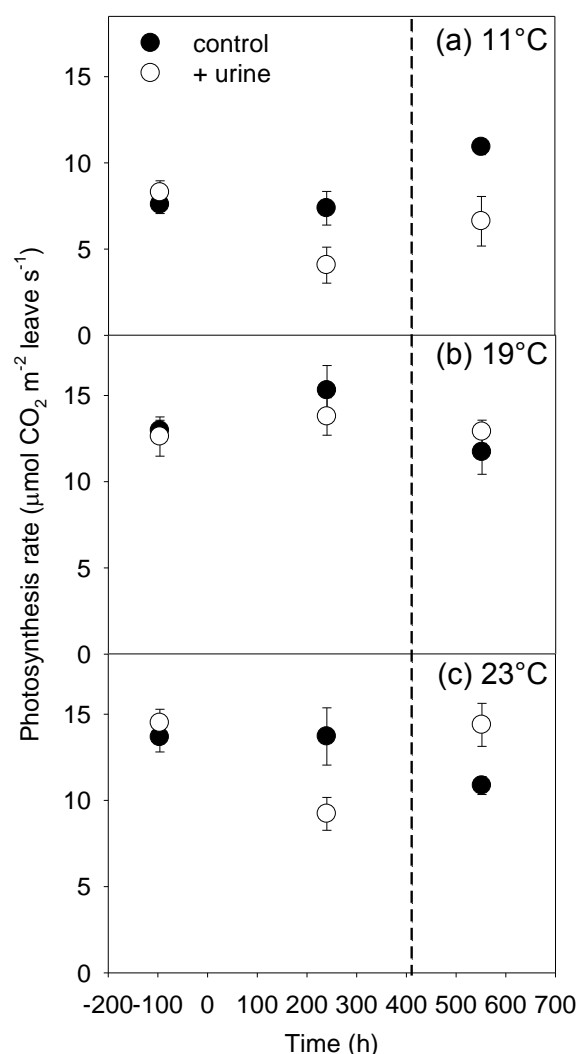
**Figure 5.8** The effect of temperature, ryegrass and urine treatments on the contribution of  $f_{OM}$  to the  $CO_2$  flux, (a) 24 h, (b) 360 h, and (c) 552 h following a urine application. The error bars represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ).

#### 5.4.10 Photosynthesis rates and plant growth

Increasing temperature significantly ( $p < 0.001$ ) increased photosynthesis rates ( $A$ ) when averaged across the urine treatments. Urine application decreased ( $p < 0.05$ )  $A$  at 240 h at 11° and 23°C (Fig. 5.9a and c) but not at 19°C (Fig. 5.9b). At 552 h,  $A$  in the + *urine* treatments was higher ( $p < 0.05$ ) than in the *control* treatment at 23°C, but at 11°C  $A$  in the + *urine* treatment remained lower ( $p < 0.01$ ) than in the *control* treatment at this time.

Increasing temperatures had a positive effect ( $p < 0.01$ ) on leaf and root biomass (Table 5.9). Urine treatment had a negative effect ( $p < 0.01$ ) on the root biomass at all of the treatment temperatures whereas urine treatment had no effect on the leaf biomass (Table 5.9).

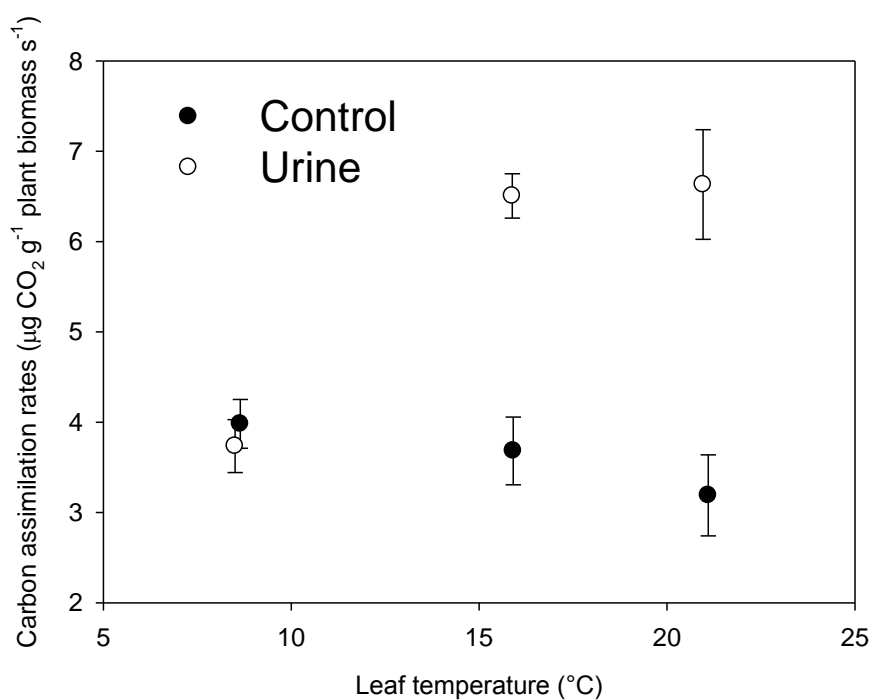
Using the plant biomass data in Table 5.9 and the photosynthesis data at 552 h, the photosynthesis rates were also expressed as per unit of plant biomass (leaf + root) to compare with previously measured values in Chapter 4 (Fig. 4.3). With urine,  $A$  increased with temperature whereas without urine,  $A$  remained constant across treatment temperatures. This was because, without urine, leaf: root ratio was markedly decreased with increasing temperature (Table 5.9).



**Figure 5.9** Photosynthesis rates ( $\mu\text{mol CO}_2 \text{ m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ ) of ryegrass plants in the *ryegrass+urine* and *ryegrass control* treatments at (a) 11°C, (b) 19°C and (c) 23°C over time (h). The measurements were taken 96 h before the urine application (-96 h), and 240 h and 552 h following the urine application. Values are means of 6 measurements taken from three different pots and the error bars represent SEM ( $n = 6$ ). The vertical dashed line shows the timing of the increase in soil moisture from 50% to 70% WFPS (at 408 h following the urine application).

**Table 5.9 Leaf and root dry weight biomass (g pot<sup>-1</sup>) at the end of the experiment (672 h following the urine treatment). The data is the average of three replicates and the error bars represent SEM (*n* = 3).**

Temperature	Vegetation	Leaf	Root
		g pot <sup>-1</sup>	
11°C	ryegrass control	4.64 ± 0.53	4.36 ± 0.91
	ryegrass + urine	2.52 ± 0.56	0.59 ± 0.19
19°C	ryegrass control	6.72 ± 0.26	8.45 ± 1.74
	ryegrass + urine	8.65 ± 0.44	3.29 ± 0.69
23°C	ryegrass control	7.75 ± 0.80	10.89 ± 1.98
	ryegrass + urine	10.35 ± 0.09	5.34 ± 0.78



**Figure 5.10 Temperature response of the carbon assimilation rates, at 552 h, of ryegrass with (○) and without (●) urine treatment. Error bars represent SEM (*n* = 4).**

For the photosynthesis data measured at 552 h, the percentage of CO<sub>2</sub> respired via  $R_{\text{RDU}}$  per unit weight of net CO<sub>2</sub> fixed by photosynthesis ( $A$ ) was calculated (Table 5.10). This calculation was performed based on the assumption that abiotic CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes from urine ceased by 552 h following the urine application and root-derived C was the only source of  $R_{\text{RDU}}$ . Increasing  $T_{\text{S}}$  ( $p < 0.001$ ) significantly increased the percentage of  $R_{\text{RDU}}$  per unit of  $A$ . There was a significant interaction ( $p < 0.05$ ) between temperature and urine treatments in terms of the percentage of  $R_{\text{RDU}}$  per  $A$ . At 11°C, urine application increased the percentage of soil-respired CO<sub>2</sub> per  $A$  whereas at 19° and 23°C, the effect of urine application was the opposite (Table 5.10).

**Table 5.10 The estimated fractions of urine and root-derived C utilisation ( $R_{\text{RDU}}$ ) per unit weight of net CO<sub>2</sub> fixed by photosynthesis at 552 h following urine application. The errors represent SEM ( $n = 3$ ).**

Soil Temperature	Treatment	$R_{\text{RDU}} / A$ (%)
11°C	ryegrass control	0.40 ± 0.09
	ryegrass + urine	0.48 ± 0.27
19°C	ryegrass control	2.32 ± 0.25
	ryegrass + urine	0.82 ± 0.40
23°C	ryegrass control	2.89 ± 0.03
	ryegrass + urine	2.19 ± 0.14

## 5.5 Discussion

### 5.5.1 Effects of temperature, soil moisture, ryegrass and urine on soil N<sub>2</sub>O flux

Increased soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes both with and without ryegrass present, following urine application, can be attributed to the enhanced supply of N made available following the hydrolysis of the urea-N contained in the urine. This fact is supported by the high soil inorganic-N concentrations measured at the end of the experiment (Table 5.2).

At 11°C, without plants, urine application to the soil induced a greater cumulative N<sub>2</sub>O flux than that with plants (Table 5.1). At 11°C, plants corresponded with a halving of the EF. This may have reflected the soil's low N availability due to its low fertility, and consequent urine-N uptake by plants. Any plant uptake of N may have also reduced N<sub>2</sub>O via nitrification since nitrifying bacteria and plants compete for NH<sub>4</sub><sup>+</sup>-N (Verhagen et al., 1995). Urine-derived N, as NO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>-N, would still be coming 'on stream' within 48 h of urine application and it is likely that substrates for denitrification would have been limited to antecedent inorganic-N at this time. The hydrolysis of urea was more relatively prolonged at 11°C, based on soil CO<sub>2</sub> flux data (discussed below), and this supports the assumption that substrates for denitrification was limited at this time.

Another reason for lower N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes occurred with plants, at 11°C, could have been due to soil structure changes resulting from ryegrass root growth, since roots can reduce the anaerobic environments in soils that are preferred by denitrifying bacteria (Cornish, 1993). Although countering this would be the effect of oxygen consumption by ryegrass roots and exudation of C by roots which could both have enhanced N<sub>2</sub>O reduction via denitrification. Even in the presence of urine, the measurements of photosynthesis showed that C was being fixed by ryegrass, despite the possible occurrence of ammonia toxicity and root-scorching due to high soil pH. Some of this C would have been rapidly released via root exudation (Day and Detling, 1990). However, the C exudation by roots at 11°C could have been too small to supply the demand by denitrifiers because photosynthesis rates were approximately a half of those at 19° and 23°C (Fig. 5.9). Without plant-derived readily available C, soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions have been reported to be low under urine patches (Carter et al., 2006). The low photosynthesis rates at 11°C may have been because of higher salt concentrations, a result of reduced N uptake and slower nitrification rates but also most likely because the 11°C temperature is approaching the minimum temperature (6 – 7°C) at which perennial ryegrass grows (Peacock, 1975). The ryegrass root biomass at 11°C, as a proportion of leaf biomass,

was markedly lower (Table 5.9) and this would also have reduced the potential for distributing root C exudates.

At 19° and 23°C, urine application to the soil induced a significant increase of the N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes. The emission factors at 19° and 23°C were greater than that at 11°C, with and without plants. At 19° and 23°C, without plants, soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes following urine application were smaller than those with plants.

The reason that ryegrass increased soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes at 19° and 23°C in the presence of urine was probably due to enhanced plant activity at these  $T_s$  and the associated increase in root exudates. As the  $T_s$  increased the leaf and root dry masses also increased along with photosynthetic C fixation, resulting in greater C supply to the soil microbial community. Soil NO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup>-N would also have been prevalent, based upon previous urine studies (e.g. Clough et al., 2009) and in conjunction with the enhanced C exudation and elevated WFPS denitrification could have occurred. A previous field study has also reported a positive influence of plant roots on soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes using maize plants (Song and Zhang, 2009).

The occurrence of higher N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes immediately post urine application, during the moderate moisture phase, agrees with previous studies performed in urine patches at similar soil moisture contents (~50% WFPS) (Carter, 2007; Yamulki et al., 1998). The reason that the soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes initially peaked within 48 h following the urine application, during the moderate moisture phase, was most likely due to the increase in WFPS that occurred as a result of the urine application, which would have made the soil more anaerobic and potentially enhanced denitrification of antecedent inorganic-N. Bouwman (1998) reported that denitrification rates increased with increasing soil moisture and highest denitrification rates were found at a WFPS above 60%.

Soil N<sub>2</sub>O flux rates peaked at 225 µg N<sub>2</sub>O-N kg<sup>-1</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> (equivalent to 13000 µg N<sub>2</sub>O-N m<sup>-2</sup> h<sup>-1</sup>) in the current study (19 d following the urine application at 23°C with plants). The N<sub>2</sub>O flux rates are comparable to other studies, for example, Luo et al. (2008) measured soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes following the addition of cow urine (applied at 1000 kg N ha<sup>-1</sup>) on a New Zealand pasture, and the recorded values for the fluxes were up to 6000 µg N<sub>2</sub>O-N m<sup>-2</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> under comparable soil NO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> and moisture conditions. Uchida et al. (2008) also recorded peak soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes of 8000 µg N<sub>2</sub>O-N m<sup>-2</sup> h<sup>-1</sup> 900 h after the application of fresh cow urine (at 15°C, equivalent to 340 kg N ha<sup>-1</sup>) when a pasture soil was repacked and heavily compacted. Thus the N<sub>2</sub>O flux results are well within what would be expected under normal pasture conditions.

Following the increase in soil moisture at 408 h the observed increase in the  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  flux was again most likely a consequence of the increased WFPS enhancing denitrification. This is also consistent with previous work that has shown a marked increase in  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions when WFPS exceeds approximately 60% (Clough et al., 2004; Linn and Doran, 1984). Pihlatie et al. (2004) also reported that the dominant  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  production process in soils changed from nitrification to denitrification when soil moisture content was increased from 40% to 100% WFPS. At a similar soil moisture content to the moderate moisture phase in the current study (WFPS = 50%), nitrification and denitrification were found to contribute equally to the  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  production under a urine patch (Carter, 2007), but denitrification was reported to be the dominant source of  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  under the high moisture condition (WFPS = 70%) (Monaghan and Barraclough, 1993). Russow et al. (2009) has shown that denitrification increases significantly when the oxygen percentage in the soil falls below 2%, and as WFPS increases microsites for denitrification become more numerous as oxygen content in the soil decreases. The response to elevated WFPS at 408 h was further influenced by  $T_s$  and this is discussed below.

The availability of substrate N strongly controls soil  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  fluxes (Tiemann and Billings, 2008). During the moderate moisture phase, the lack of any effect of  $T_s$  on soil  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  fluxes, in the absence of urine indicates that the response to  $T_s$  depended on N substrate availability, and that there was insufficient N to be lost via nitrification or denitrification pathways. Thus it follows that the presence of ryegrass also had no influence on  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  fluxes in the absence of urine during the moderate moisture phase, since N substrate would presumably have been even less available for soil microbes when plant competition for N was also present.

Hence the changes in  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  fluxes to  $T_s$  following the soil moisture increase, observed in the current study, were probably due to the responses of both denitrifiers and ryegrass to  $T_s$ . Temperature optima for denitrification have been reported to be 60° to 75°C (Keeney et al., 1979) while the optima for ryegrass is 18° to 21°C (Mitchell, 1956). However,  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  production via nitrifiers cannot be ruled out and  $\text{NH}_4^+$ -N was still present in all urine treatments at the end of the experiment. Temperature optima for nitrifiers have been reported as approximately 35°C (Stark, 1996) thus the  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  fluxes may have been partially formed via nitrification.

The results agree with a previous review article, focusing on grassland systems, which concluded that soil  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  fluxes are the most sensitive to temperature at a soil moisture content range of 60 to 80% WFPS (Flechard et al., 2007). However, the novelty of these current



results is the demonstration of the interaction between pasture plants, temperature and ruminant urine and their essential effects on N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes.

### 5.5.2 <sup>15</sup>N enrichment and recovery as N<sub>2</sub>O

During the first 120 h at  $\geq 19^{\circ}\text{C}$ , the contribution of urine-N to soil N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes was higher with plants presence, when compared to the N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes from soils without plants, as shown by the N<sub>2</sub>O-<sup>15</sup>N enrichment (Fig. 5.2). The fact that the same effect was later observed between 120 and 240 h at  $11^{\circ}\text{C}$  indicates that the effect was temperature driven, in addition to any effect the presence of ryegrass had. Temperature affects biological processes, such as microbial activity and plant growth, and abiotic processes such as urea hydrolysis. As described above (section 5.2) the hydrolysis of urea results in elevated CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes and a return to the antecedent pH level, which of course may change further due to nitrification. This elevated CO<sub>2</sub> flux was observed to be of much shorter duration as  $T_s$  increased (section 5.4.7), indicating that urea hydrolysis was faster at higher  $T_s$ . This means the soil NH<sub>4</sub><sup>+</sup>-N pool would have formed more rapidly at higher  $T_s$  leading to progressively earlier microbial utilisation of this soil NH<sub>4</sub><sup>+</sup>-N pool as  $T_s$  increased. During this period, higher <sup>15</sup>N enrichment was observed in the N<sub>2</sub>O from the *ryegrass + urine* treatment when the soil was at the moderate moisture phase. This would have favoured nitrification and denitrification as opposed to predominantly denitrification after 408 h (the high moisture phase). Thus N<sub>2</sub>O could have derived from either mechanism. However, for plants to influence the N<sub>2</sub>O-<sup>15</sup>N enrichment there would have needed to be an increased C exudate supply at the higher  $T_s$  influencing denitrification due to enhanced ryegrass growth at these temperatures (after NH<sub>4</sub><sup>+</sup>-N subsequent nitrification would have enhanced the nitrite pool and this may have been denitrified), or due to the microbial environment being enhanced by presence of the plant rhizosphere. The exact mechanism cannot be determined from the results obtained so far and warrant further investigation.

It was expected that as  $T_s$  increased, the contribution of urine-N to the N<sub>2</sub>O flux would decline since soil-N mineralisation is considered to increase with  $T_s$  (Kladivko and Keeney, 1987; Stanford et al., 1973). However, the <sup>15</sup>N enrichment of the N<sub>2</sub>O flux did not differ at 552 h due to  $T_s$  indicating that urine-N presence and not  $T_s$  determined the N<sub>2</sub>O-N source. At the end of the experiment (672 h),  $\leq 15\%$  of the N<sub>2</sub>O-N originated from soil-N. More soil-N would be available for soil microbes to produce N<sub>2</sub>O at higher  $T_s$ .

This may have been because the amount of mineralised soil-N was relatively small compared to the applied urine-N. The C:N ratio of the soil used in the current study was 11.7 and the

estimated mineralised C (based on the cumulative  $R_S$  during the experiment at 23°C without plants) was 2.11 g CO<sub>2</sub> kg<sup>-1</sup> (0.58 g CO<sub>2</sub>-C kg<sup>-1</sup>). Given these values, the amount of N mineralised might have been relatively small ( $0.58 / 11.7 = 0.05$  g N kg<sup>-1</sup>) when compared to the amount of N applied as urine-N (1.02 g N kg<sup>-1</sup>). Soil respiration data from the *control* treatments in the current study (section 5.5.3) indicates that the soil microbial activity ( $R_S$ ) was relatively low when compared to similar previous studies using a more fertile pastoral soil with a history of highly productive pasture species i.e. ryegrass and white clover (e.g. Clough and Kelliher, 2005). Thus, soil microbes in the soil may have not been actively mineralising labile organic N even at high  $T_S$  in the current study. In support of this hypothesis are the results of Di and Cameron (2008) who reported that approximately 40% of the N<sub>2</sub>O flux was derived from soil-N following urine application (equivalent to 1000 kg N ha<sup>-1</sup>), over a 2 month period, in a high fertility pasture soil with a ryegrass and white clover sward. Soil N mineralisation can also be higher in a pasture with legume species, used in the study by Di and Cameron (2008), compared to mineralisation in a monoculture non-legume sward, used in the current study, because of the N fixation performed by clovers (Elgersma and Hassink, 1997). Also, a previous study reported that N immobilisation rates were positively related to  $T_S$  but were also dependent on the nature of the C substrates (Nicolardot et al., 1994). Hence, in the current study, mineralised soil-N might have been immobilised into the microbial-N pool instead of being used for N<sub>2</sub>O production.

Nitrous oxide emissions were not measured in previous experiments (Chapter 3 and 4). However, in a fertile pasture soil without plants, I observed a positive relationship between microbial ability to access more recalcitrant organic matter and  $T_S$  (Uchida et al., 2010). Similarly, in Chapter 4, I showed that the fraction of  $R_{OM}$  to  $R_S$  increased with  $T_S$  in a fertile soil with plants. However, in a less fertile soil, used in the current experiment, the phenomena described above were not observed and  $R_{OM}$  remained constant across  $T_S$  ranging from 13° – 27°C (Fig. 4.2). Thus, the increase in soil microbial activity and consequent soil-N mineralisation with increasing  $T_S$  might not have been occurring in the low fertility soil used in the current experiment due to low microbial activity. These may explain the relatively low contribution from soil-N to the N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes in the current study. It is likely that more soil-N would have been available for soil microbes to produce N<sub>2</sub>O if a more fertile soil was used in the current study because in a fertile soil, the mineralization of soil-C and soil-N is more likely to occur and the relatively lower C:N ratio in fertile soils suggest that more N is mineralized per a unit of soil organic matter mineralization.

Although urine-induced soil-N mineralisation did not increase with  $T_S$  in the current study, urine-induced priming increased  $R_S$  (section 5.5.3). Similarly, Gao et al. (2009) reported that, in soils with high C:N ratio ( $> 13$ ),  $R_S$  positively responded to  $T_S$  while N mineralisation rates were below zero and were constant when  $T_S$  ranged from  $5^\circ - 15^\circ\text{C}$ . However, many models predict a positive relationship between  $R_S$  and soil-N mineralisation (Rodrigo et al., 1997). Further study is required to investigate how background soil characteristics, for example, soil fertility, labile organic C and N contents, and general soil fertility, influence the contribution of soil-N to  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  fluxes under urine patches and the response of the pasture N cycle to soil warming.

The increased recovery of  $^{15}\text{N}$  as  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N during the high moisture phase, particularly in the presence of ryegrass, and elevated  $T_S$  (Fig. 5.3), occurred for reasons outlined above with respect to  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  fluxes, i.e. the probable increase in denitrification during this phase due to enhanced anaerobic and warmer conditions with increased root exudate C supply. Such moisture induced effects have also been observed previously, for example, Clough et al. (2004) reported increases in  $^{15}\text{N}$  recovery from  $< 0.1 - 0.4\%$  to  $0.4 - 1.7\%$  when soil moisture contents were increased from field capacity to saturated conditions over an 85 day period.

At  $11^\circ$  and  $19^\circ\text{C}$ , with and without plants, the EF, estimated from the cumulative  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  fluxes (Table 5.1), was larger than the percentage recovery of  $^{15}\text{N}$ . At  $11^\circ\text{C}$ , similar to the EF, plant corresponded with a halving of the percentage recovery of  $^{15}\text{N}$  (Fig. 5.3). At  $19^\circ$  and  $23^\circ\text{C}$ , plants increased the EF (Table 5.1) and the percentage recovery of  $^{15}\text{N}$  (Fig. 5.3). The EF was remarkably similar to the percentage recovery of  $^{15}\text{N}$ , at  $23^\circ\text{C}$ . This comparison suggests that virtually all of the emitted  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  derived from the applied urine-N at  $23^\circ\text{C}$  and N mineralisation did not contribute to the emitted  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ .

The range in the percentage recovery of  $^{15}\text{N}$ , as  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N, in this study (Fig. 5.3) is comparable to previous studies listed below. In a field study conducted at a  $T_S$  of  $10^\circ\text{C}$  on a ryegrass dominated pasture, the percentage of  $^{15}\text{N}$  recovered as  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N was  $0.05\%$  after 720 h following urine application ( $1030 \text{ kg N ha}^{-1}$ ) (Wachendorf et al., 2008). Clough et al. (1996) conducted a lysimeter study with a silt loam mineral soil and recovered  $3\%$  of  $^{15}\text{N}$  applied as  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N 100 d after urine application ( $500 \text{ kg N ha}^{-1}$ ). The percentage of  $^{15}\text{N}$  recovered as  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$ -N will vary according to soil type (Clough et al., 1998) and experimental duration.

### **5.5.3 Effects of temperature, soil moisture, ryegrass and urine on soil $\text{CO}_2$ flux**

Urine application greatly increased  $R_S$  (cumulative  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  minus the total amounts of  $\text{CO}_2$  produced due to urea hydrolysis and from other urine-C) and this was interpreted as a urine-

induced priming effect (Table 5.6). Clough et al. (2003) observed a similar phenomenon when 500 kg N ha<sup>-1</sup> of synthetic urine was applied to a silt loam pasture soil. Clough et al. (2003) showed that during a 60 d incubation at 20°C, at field capacity, the control soil and urine treated soil produced 3.4 and 4.0 g CO<sub>2</sub> kg<sup>-1</sup>, respectively, solely due to  $R_S$  in the absence of plants. Another study by Clough and Kelliher (2005) reported  $R_S$  from the control and urine treated soils (over 10 d) to be 1.6 and 1.1 g CO<sub>2</sub> kg<sup>-1</sup>, hence in their study,  $R_S$  decreased under urine patch when compared to  $R_S$  in the control soil (negative urine-derived priming effect). Another study, performed on a grass-clover pasture, also showed that there was no increase in  $R_S$  following a 400 kg N ha<sup>-1</sup> urine application (Bol et al., 2004). In the current study, at 19°C and without plants, the control soil and urine treated soil produced  $0.3 \pm 0.1$  and  $1.5 \pm 0.2$  g CO<sub>2</sub> kg<sup>-1</sup> from  $R_S$  (Table 5.6). Hence the magnitude of the priming effect ( $R_S$  in the urine treated soil /  $R_S$  in the control soil) was markedly larger for the current study when compared to the previous studies above (Clough and Kelliher, 2005; Clough et al., 2003). This may have been because of the competition for nutrients between soil microbes under low fertility conditions (discussed below).

The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  also support the fact that a significant proportion of the  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  originated from soil-C. When averaged across temperature treatments, approximately 40 and 70% of  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  originated from the soil-C at 24 and 552 h, respectively, in the *soil + urine* treatment (Fig. 5.8). A direct comparison of the amount of respired soil-C estimated by cumulative  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  and by the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values was constrained because the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values were measured only three times in the current study. However, the trends are the same and of the same magnitude when comparing the two methods with regards to the magnitude of priming effect. A significant amount of soil-C was almost certainly solubilised, due to an increase in soil pH, and respired following urine treatment application.

There is a significant lack of published information with which to ascertain the factor(s) that control the urine-derived priming effect. However, when comparing the current study with the previous studies above (Clough and Kelliher, 2005; Clough et al., 2003) it can be seen that at low rates of  $R_S$  the magnitude of the urine-derived priming effect is relatively higher. However, this comparison is confounded by differing urine-N rates between the current study and the previous studies. The control soil in the study of Clough and Kelliher (2005) showed the highest  $R_S$  rate (1.6 g CO<sub>2</sub> kg<sup>-1</sup> in 10 d) but showed the lowest magnitude of urine-derived priming effect, whereas the control soil used in the current study showed the lowest  $R_S$  rate (0.3 g CO<sub>2</sub> kg<sup>-1</sup> in 28 d) but showed the highest magnitude of urine-derived priming effect.

Soils used in the previously referenced studies (see above) were from ryegrass and white clover pastures and they were relatively more fertile when compared to the soil used in the current study ( $C_4$  grass pasture). In a previous experiment (Chapter 4), with plants and without urine treatment, the fraction of  $R_{OM}$  in  $R_S$  was smaller in a low fertility soil, used in the current study ( $C_4$  soil), when compared to a high fertility soil (Fig. 4.2), suggesting that mineralisation was limited in the low fertility soil when urine was not present. A previous study reported that in forest soils, soil organic C mineralisation in the N-poor soils was limited by N availability and thus increased strongly after the addition of an N containing compound (Hamer and Marschner, 2005), hence similar mechanisms may control the magnitude of urine-induced priming effects in pasture soils. Also, Fontaine et al. (2003) reported that the priming effect results from the competition for nutrient between the microbes. Similarly, Phillips and Fahey (2008) reported that the magnitude of a priming effect was stronger in nutrient-poor soils when compared to nutrient rich soils. Hence, the priming effect is more likely to occur in low fertility soils with relatively less available nutrients, when compared to fertile soils. Therefore, factors such as soil fertility and microbial availability of soil nutrients will almost certainly influence the magnitude of urine-derived priming effect. Further study is required to assess the influence of soil fertility on  $R_S$  and possible priming effects.

In the current study, the urine-induced priming effect on  $R_S$  was greater at lower  $T_S$  (Table 5.6(e)) possibly because of slower rates of chemical and biological reactions in the soil at lower  $T_S$ . As noted above the hydrolysis of urea was more relatively prolonged at 11°C thus the soil pH possibly remained higher for longer at this temperature and therefore the solubilisation of soil organic matter due to elevated soil pH was also likely to have occurred over a longer period. This may have made soil C available to the microbial pool for a longer period.

However, the urine treatment effect (increase in the actual amount of  $CO_2$  emissions from  $R_S$  when urine was applied, Table 5.6(d)) was not strongly affected by  $T_S$ . Soil respiration is expected to increase 120% when  $T_S$  increases from 11° to 23°C but in the current study, urine treatment effect (Table 5.6(d)) increased only 40% without plants and with urine when  $T_S$  increases from 11° to 23°C, suggesting that the urine treatment effect was limited by insufficient C substrate availability. This may have reflected the soil's low C quality.

The estimated fraction of root- and urine-derived  $CO_2$  ( $R_{RDU}$ ) per unit weight of net  $CO_2$  fixed by photosynthesis ( $R_{RDU}/A$ , Table 5.10) increased with increasing  $T_S$ , when averaged across urine treatment. A previous study (Chapter 4) showed that > 70% of soil-respired  $CO_2$

originated from root-derived C and the values for root-derived C/A increased with increasing  $T_S$  (Table 4.3). Hence the similar trend was observed in Chapter 4 and 5. Given these facts, increasing  $R_{RDU}/A$  with increasing  $T_S$  may suggest that plants used assimilated C more efficiently at lower  $T_S$ . Urine treatment markedly reduced  $R_{RDU}/A$  at 19°C. The reason for this is difficult to fathom but this may be related to the fact that the optimum temperature for the ryegrass growth is approximately 19°C (Mitchell, 1956). Hence, this change in plant physiology with  $T_S$  changes might have influenced the magnitude of priming effects. In addition, changes in soil microbial community might have had an influence on the magnitude of priming effects. However, the mechanisms related to this hypothesis are unknown and further research is needed in this area.

The reason why plant presence would reduce the urine-induced priming effect (Table 5.6) is harder to fathom but following on from the logic above it may be that the soil microbial community, in the presence of plants, was larger or growing more rapidly following urine application and some of the primed soil C may have been incorporated into the microbial C pool. It was reported that without plants, the addition of inorganic-N ( $NH_4NO_3$ ) to a soil induced a short-term (< 30 d) increase in  $R_S$  when the inorganic-N was added together with various plant residues, because the addition of the inorganic-N reduced the C:N ratio and this favoured the microbial decomposition of plant residues (Lueken et al., 1962). Thus, the reduction of the C:N ratio due to the urine-N addition may have been a factor controlling the urine-induced priming effect, and this reduction of the C:N ratio may have occurred more efficiently in the absence of plants, due to the lack of plant N uptake, in the current study, driving the urine-induced priming effect.

The time course of  $F_{CO_2}$  ( $R_S$  plus  $CO_2$  derived from abiotic processes) following the urine treatment in this study was similar to the data obtained from a previous study using a grassland soil (Kelliher et al., 2007) where the experiment was conducted at  $19.2 \pm 1.2^\circ C$  and the parameters  $b$  and  $r$  obtained by fitting the same model were not significantly different from the parameters obtained in the current study at 19°C (Table 5.5). The range in the parameter  $r$  in this study (Table 5.5) is comparable to previously reported  $r$  values in this thesis, using a fertile soil without urine (Table 3.1). In the current study, the decline of  $F_{CO_2}$  was faster at higher  $T_S$  but this trend was not clear in the fertile soil without urine at  $T_S$  ranging from 3° to 24°C (Chapter 3). Based on the differentiation of eqn. 5.5, which may be written as  $dF_{CO_2} / dt = \{ [F_{CO_2}(t) - a] \ln(r) \}$ , the natural logarithm ( $\ln$ ) of  $r$  expresses the magnitude of the decline in  $F_{CO_2}$  and this method was previously used to examine the changes

in  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  over time following urine application on pasture soils (Kelliher et al., 2005b). The  $\ln(r)$  values suggest that after urea application, the magnitude of the decay in  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  was controlled by  $T_s$  and not by the plants present (Table 5.11). This was because of the abiotic release of  $\text{CO}_2$  due to urea hydrolysis, as noted above, which increased as  $T_s$  increased.

**Table 5.11 Natural logarithm of the parameter  $r$ , determined from eqn. 5.5 (Table 5.5). For each ryegrass treatment (*ryegrass + urine* and *soil + urine*), dissimilar letters represent significant differences between treatment temperatures.**

	ryegrass + urine	soil + urine
11°C	-0.011 ± 0.001 <sup>a</sup>	-0.010 ± 0.002 <sup>a</sup>
19°C	-0.021 ± 0.002 <sup>b</sup>	-0.019 ± 0.002 <sup>b</sup>
23°C	-0.070 ± 0.012 <sup>c</sup>	-0.053 ± 0.007 <sup>c</sup>

The values of  $a$ , the asymptote, only increased significantly at higher  $T_s$  in the presence of ryegrass and urine, when compared to the  $a$  in the *soil + urine* treatment, because of the increasing contribution of root-derived C to  $R_s$  at higher  $T_s$  as time progressed. This theory is supported by the measured photosynthesis rates. At 11° and 19°C, photosynthesis rates were reduced or unchanged by the urine treatment (Fig. 5.9a and b), whereas at 23°C, photosynthesis rates had increased 552 h after urine application (Fig. 5.9c). Root exudation has also been shown to be temperature dependent over the range 7° – 30°C in a western wheatgrass (*Agropyron smithii* Rydb.) (Bokhari and Singh, 1974). Also, leaf biomass in the *ryegrass + urine* treatment increased at higher  $T_s$  but decreased at lower  $T_s$ , when compared to the *ryegrass control* treatment (Table 5.8). This suggests that, at lower  $T_s$ , urine application negatively affected plant growth, possibly because of root-scorching. Thus, the decreased plant growth at lower  $T_s$  and subsequent decrease in root-derived C input in the *ryegrass + urine* treatment is probably the reason for the unchanged value of  $a$  with/without ryegrass at lower  $T_s$ .

In the first experiment (Chapter 3) the values of  $a$  increased with increasing  $T_s$  in the absence of ryegrass and urine (Table 3.1). The soil used in Chapter 3 was more fertile, compared to the soil used in the current study, and did not receive urine thus direct comparisons are not possible. However, it is possible that increased replication in the current study may have seen the  $a$  values increasing with  $T_s$  in the absence of ryegrass because there was a trend for a positive relationship between  $T_s$  and the  $a$  values but with large errors (Table 5.5).

The fact that the increase in soil moisture content had no significant effect on the  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  data may have been because WFPS was not limiting even at the moderate moisture regime. Doran (1984) reported a close relationship between  $R_s$  and soil moisture content, with peak activity at 60% WFPS hence the two WFPS phases used in this experiment, 50% and 70%, might also have been close to the optimum in terms of  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$ .

#### 5.5.4 The $\delta^{13}\text{C}$ values of soil $\text{CO}_2$ fluxes

The  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values from soil organic matter decomposition ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{OM}}$ ) and root-derived C respiration ( $\delta^{13}\text{C}_{\text{RDU}}$ ), measured in this study (Table 5.7), were typical of the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values from  $\text{C}_4$  and  $\text{C}_3$  plants previously reported (O'Leary, 1988) and comparable to those in Chapter 4 (Table 4.2). Using the natural  $^{13}\text{C}$  abundance,  $R_{\text{OM}}$  could be separately quantified but urine-derived  $\text{CO}_2$  and root-derived  $\text{CO}_2$  could not be separated as shown above because both originated from C derived from  $\text{C}_3$  sources, hence the sum of urine-derived and root-derived  $\text{CO}_2$  was termed  $R_{\text{RDU}}$ .

The significant increase in  $f_{\text{OM}}$  in the *ryegrass* + *urine* treatment, when compared to the *ryegrass control* treatment, was observed at 19°C (360 and 552 h) (Fig. 5.7b). Based on the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values, this was also able to be interpreted as a urine-induced priming effect on  $R_{\text{OM}}$  with plants present. A direct comparison between the urine-induced priming effect indicated by  $f_{\text{OM}}$  and the priming effect previously discussed (Table 5.6) is not appropriate since the previous priming effect discussed (Table 5.6) was based on the cumulative  $R_s$  and this did not distinguish between  $R_{\text{OM}}$  and  $R_{\text{RDU}}$ . Nevertheless both approaches demonstrate the positive urine-induced priming effect, in the current study.

Fontaine et al. (2003) have reported that a positive priming effect occurred when there was a competition among soil microbes for the readily available C. Hence, in this study, there might have been a competition for the readily available C between plants and soil microbial community only at 19°C while at 11° and 23°C, the priming effect was probably limited due to low soil microbial activity at a low  $T_s$  (11°C) or due to the fact that plants were supplying enough readily C substrates hence there was no competition for the readily available C (23°C). The optimal temperature for ryegrass growth is 18° to 21°C (Mitchell, 1956), hence in the presence of ryegrass, urine treatment may have increased  $f_{\text{OM}}$  only at 19°C because 19°C was the ryegrass' optimum temperature. Also,  $f_{\text{OM}}$  is controlled by the amount (Blagodatskaya and Kuzyakov, 2008) and types (Hamer and Marschner, 2005) of added C substrates.

Blagodatskaya and Kuzyakov (2008) showed that the magnitude of priming effects linearly increased until the additions of easily available organic C became 15% of microbial biomass



C. I did not measure the microbial biomass C in this experiment hence further study is needed in this area. Hamer and Marschner (2005) reported that the combined addition of fructose and alanine induced a higher positive priming effect than the single substrate additions. Again, I did not measure the components of root-derived C in this experiment hence this could be studied in future. In the current study, the combination of urine, ryegrass and the optimum  $T_S$  for plant growth possibly created the optimum conditions for the increase in  $f_{OM}$ , when compared to the conditions without ryegrass or urine.

However, the significant increase in the proportion of  $R_{OM}$  in  $R_S$  ( $f_{OM}$ ) in the *ryegrass + urine* treatment, when compared to the  $f_{OM}$  in the *ryegrass control* treatment, observed at 19°C did not result in a significant increase of actual C loss from the soil via  $R_{OM}$ . This finding was possibly because of the relatively large errors associated in the actual soil CO<sub>2</sub> fluxes ( $R_S$ ). However, there was a trend for the magnitude of the urine-induced priming effect to be higher at 360 h and 552 h in the *ryegrass + urine* treatment when compared with the *ryegrass control* treatment (Table 5.8).

With plants and without urine, sources of  $R_S$  in the current study were either root-derived C or soil organic matter C. In Chapter 4, using the same plant and soil used in the current study, increasing  $T_S$  decreased  $f_{OM}$  without plants (Table 4.2). However, this was not clearly observed in the current study (Fig. 5.8). The two experiments were performed under different light levels due to the availability of growth cabinets (700 and 400  $\mu\text{mol m}^{-2} \text{s}^{-1}$  PAR in Chapter 4 and 5, respectively), thus the light levels could have influenced the plant activity and consequent C supply to soil, resulting in the different relationship between  $T_S$  and  $f_{OM}$ . Further study is required in this area.

Without plants, there were only two sources of  $R_S$  in the current study,  $R_{OM}$  and the abiotic CO<sub>2</sub> production (e.g. urea hydrolysis) because there were no C inputs from plants. Based on the  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of soil-respired CO<sub>2</sub> from the soils without plants, at 24 h following urine application, approximately 50 to 70% of  $R_S$  originated from urine-C and there was no effect of  $T_S$  (Fig. 5.8a). However, at 360 and 552 h, only 0 to 20% of  $R_S$  originated from urine-C at 19° and 23°C whereas approximately 50% of  $R_S$  still originated from urine-C at 11°C (Fig. 5.8b and c). This was because urea hydrolysis was reduced at the lower  $T_S$  as shown by the model (eqn. 5.5) fitted to the  $F_{\text{CO}_2}$  data. Based on the comparison of the  $r$  values, it was estimated that urea hydrolysis occurred at a slower rate at lower  $T_S$ .

## 5.6 Conclusion

This study showed that increasing plant-derived C, at higher temperatures, increased N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes under high moisture conditions. At a lower temperature (11°C), the positive effect on plant-derived C on N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes was not observed. At the highest temperature treatment (23°C), plants increased the EF and percentage recovery of <sup>15</sup>N by about 3-fold

Urine application induced a priming effect and enhanced C mineralisation of the soil organic matter accounted for the increased  $R_S$ . Urine application increased  $F_{CO_2}$  but the fluxes decayed faster as  $T_S$  increased because urea hydrolysis rates also increased with  $T_S$ . The urine-induced priming effect was relatively larger at lower  $T_S$ , and was larger without ryegrass present based on cumulative  $R_S$ . This was probably because at lower  $T_S$ , chemical and biological reactions occurred at slower rates, soil pH remained higher for a longer period and there was a longer time for soil organic matter solubilisation. The relatively large magnitude of the urine-induced priming effect observed in the current study, when compared to previous work, may have been because of the lower fertility and lower nutrient status of the soil. In the presence of ryegrass, urine application increased the contribution of  $R_{OM}$  to  $R_S$  particularly at 19°C. This was reasoned to be due to the optimum temperature for ryegrass growth (18° – 21°C) enhancing the competition of nutrients between plants and due to microbes increasing the magnitude of priming effect. Further research is necessary to investigate the mechanisms controlling the urine-induced priming effect under pasture soils, in particular the response of the soil microbial pool and also the relationship between urine-induced priming of C and soil N<sub>2</sub>O emissions.

## Chapter 6

### Synthesis and recommendations for further research

This chapter synthesises my research and identifies emergent opportunities for advancement by further research.

#### 6.1 Overall summary and future work

##### 6.1.1 Soil microbial respiration responses to changing temperature and substrate availability in fertile grassland

This study used highly fertile soil had been sampled from beneath pasture grazed by dairy cattle with the shoots and roots removed. The objective of this study was to quantify the interaction between soil temperature and soil substrate availability on soil microbial activity in the absence of plant substrate inputs. The soil was incubated in the laboratory under constant moisture status. Thus without plants present the quantity of total C substrate was fixed. At 3°C, the soil microbial respiration rate ( $R_M$ ) was relatively constant at  $1.05 \pm 0.03 \mu\text{g CO}_2 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-1}$  for 14 d and C substrate had evidently not been depleted, so  $R_M$  was constant. Increasing the incubation temperature from 3° to 24°C corresponded with a doubling of  $R_M$  over the 14 d. However, at 24°C,  $R_M$  declined by one time constant (by 63%) within 3 d, indicating a strong and rapid effect of the depletion of relatively labile C substrate in the absence of plants. The lower, asymptotic level of  $R_M$  maintained over the incubation's final 11 d, at 24°C, was considered to have represented utilisation of more recalcitrant C in the soil and it was significantly larger than the constant level of  $R_M$  at 3°C. This suggested the microbial community was utilised C substrate at 24°C that was unavailable at 3°C. The methodology employed in this experiment was not able to detect changes in water soluble C with cold (20°C) and hot (80°C) water soluble C contents were found to be ineffective as indicators of the changes in substrate availability that influenced  $R_M$ . Clearly a more subtle approach is required if such changes in microbially available C are to be detected. I would very much like to repeat this study but explore the possibility of using nuclear magnetic resonance (NMR) in order to try and detect shifts in the chemical composition of the soil to see if they correspond with temperature changes applied. The following questions need to be answered: (1) did increasing the incubation temperature to 24°C make more C available due to a simple abiotic mechanism or did the temperature change allow the existing microbial pool to more easily assess?; and (2) what is the relationship between the amount of available C substrates and their recalcitrance at different temperatures?

There is another possible scenario to be covered in future research. Again the same type of experiment would be performed but both the microbial composition (e.g. fungi versus bacteria) and the microbial pool size would be examined. The reason for doing this would be to see if dynamic changes in microbial composition or pool size coincided with changes in  $R_M$  and maybe NMR data, as  $T_S$  were shifted. Bradford et al. (2008) noted that thermal adaptation of microbes can occur when soil temperature is changed for a longer period of time and that this thermal adaptation can result in changes in the apparent temperature response of  $R_S$ . Short term laboratory incubations may not of course run for sufficient periods for such effects to occur.

The soil used here was the high fertility (*HF*) soil. In future work it would also be interesting to rerun a similar experiment but include the low fertility soil (*LF*) especially given the lack of temperature sensitivity that the *LF* soil (old C that was not plant derived) displayed in Chapter 4. Again it would be advantageous to include more subtle measures of the microbial community and soil chemistry as discussed above.

### **6.1.2 Fertility and plants affect the temperature sensitivity of carbon dioxide production in soils**

The objective of this study was to determine the temperature response of respiration sourced from root-derived C ( $R_{RD}$ ) and soil organic matter decomposition ( $R_{OM}$ ) in two pasture soils of contrasting nutrient status, with and without plants. Chapter 3 showed that without plants present,  $R_M$  markedly decreased within a few days due to the depletion of readily available C substrates. Many previous studies indicate that live roots significantly influence  $R_M$  sourced from the recalcitrant C substrates via priming effects (section 2.2.2.4). Soil respiration sourced from the recalcitrant C substrates was termed  $R_{OM}$  in the second experiment. In the first experiment,  $R_M$  measurement was started immediately following the soil sampling and  $R_M$  included the respiration of root-derived C. However, the  $R_{OM}$  measurement, measured in Chapter 4, was started 8 weeks following the soil sampling hence  $R_{OM}$  was purely derived from the soil-C. When live roots are present, the priming effect on  $R_{OM}$  can be either positive or negative (section 2.2.2.4) and may influence the effect of  $T_S$  on  $R_{OM}$  (Bader and Cheng, 2007). Hence, the second experiment focused on  $R_{OM}$  when plants were present.

The response of  $R_{OM}$  to  $T_S$  may also vary due to the soil's nutrient status, e.g. C and N, and with plant C inputs (Kuzyakov et al., 2000). Thus, in addition to the nutrient rich dairy farm soil (*HF* soil), used in Chapter 3, an extensively managed low fertility dairy farm soil (*LF* soil) was used in the second experiment.

When plants are present, soil CO<sub>2</sub> efflux ( $R_S$ ) includes  $R_{OM}$  and respiration sourced from root-derived C ( $R_{RD}$ ). In Chapter 4,  $R_S$  was separated into  $R_{OM}$  and  $R_{RD}$  using a natural <sup>13</sup>C abundance method.

It was concluded from this experiment that without plants,  $R_{OM}$  was equally sensitive to  $T_S$  in the nutritionally contrasting soils, with increasing  $T_S$  increasing  $R_{OM}$ . This is in agreement with the results from Chapter 3 with respect to the *HF* soil. However, when plants were present,  $R_{OM}$  was markedly less sensitive to  $T_S$  in the *LF* soil, but  $R_{OM}$  in the *HF* soil remained temperature sensitive. Further research needs to examine this interesting result to find out why the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$  was influenced by plant presence and soil fertility. Factors such as the size of soil microbial biomass, the microbial community, soil nutrient availability, and the type of root-derived C substrates might have influenced the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$ . It will be interesting to study changes in the relative microbial communities in terms of size and composition at different  $T_S$ , with/without plants in different types of soils. Both soil types had basal urea fertiliser dressings applied prior to treatment applications to ensure plant growth but clearly this did not have a unifying effect on soil microbes responsible for respiration. In the *HF* soil the old C basically behaved in a similar manner with and without plants. This may have been due to the history of management. In contrast, the quality of the soil C substrate may have been so poor in the *LF* soil that microbes were struggling to utilise it. Fig. 4.1 showed that the answer is no, as judged by the relative rates of respiration without plants present. In which case it also seems likely the soil microbial pool was of differing size and composition. As outlined above for Chapter 3, this component must be examined in future studies. It seems incongruous that in the *LF* soil that root exudate C could make such increasing contributions to the total respiration pool as  $T_S$  increased (Fig. 4.2c). It may be that root growth was covering increasing volumes of the pot as  $T_S$  increased, but it would also be interesting to know if fungal respiration increased and if it was due to hyphae being able to respond and switch rapidly to more readily available ‘new C’ from roots.

A suitable technique to explore the soil microbial response to plant added ‘new C’ would be the use of <sup>13</sup>C labelled phospholipid fatty acid signatures (PLFAs). Using the <sup>13</sup>C-PLFA analysis, changes in soil microbial communities, due to added readily available C substrates, can be monitored and the data from this analysis can be used to discuss the changes in  $R_{OM}$  response to temperature when plants were present. To follow the temporal and spatial (distance from roots) response of soil microbes to the introduction of a plant a C<sub>3</sub> plant could be added to a C<sub>4</sub> soil and vice versa with the incorporation of the newly added plant C highlighted in the microbial biomass <sup>13</sup>C signature.

Given the results of Chapter 3 and 4 it would be interesting to enhance our understanding of C availability by trying to apply a treatment that would make the recalcitrant C more available. Soil fertility presents as an influencing factor here and it would be worth investigating how a small change in soil pH of the *LF* soil, or addition of nutrients such as phosphorus might alter the soil's temperature sensitivity and the microbial community response. Especially given what appeared to be an effect of pH on increasing the priming effect observed at lower temperature in Chapter 5, where prolonged elevated pH at lower temperatures enhanced priming.

The observed changes in the temperature sensitivity of  $R_{OM}$  caused by plant presence and soil type potentially have some global significance. Ecosystem models predict that global temperature increases tend to reduce soil C storage due to a positive relationship between  $R_{OM}$  and temperature, resulting in an increase in the atmospheric concentration of  $CO_2$  and an acceleration of climate change (e.g. Cox et al., 2000). In contrast to the *LF* soil, a relatively more rapid loss of soil C occurred as  $T_S$  increased in the *HF* soil, when plants were present. Hence, the results suggested that the warming of high productivity and high fertility soils could increase the rate of soil C loss to the atmosphere more than that from less fertile soils. However, several uncertainties make this far from a simple extrapolation. For example, high fertility soils have higher plant productivity and this compensate for the increased respiration losses. Another factor not considered in this thesis is the potential effect of elevated atmospheric  $CO_2$  concentrations that would accompany predicted increases in global mean temperatures, and exert feed back over time.

### **6.1.3 Effects of bovine urine, plants and temperature on nitrous oxide and carbon dioxide emissions from a low fertility soil**

In addition to soil and plant related factors, animal grazing has a major impact on  $R_S$  and  $N_2O$  emissions in pastoral ecosystems as outlined above (section 2.2.3.5). In this study, the effect of urine application, soil temperature ( $T_S = 11^\circ, 19^\circ$  and  $23^\circ C$ ), and plants on soil  $N_2O$  fluxes and  $R_S$  was investigated.

Nitrous oxide emissions were higher when the WFPS was increased which indicated that denitrification was the driving mechanism. Despite the WFPS being at 70% the  $N_2O$  flux was relatively short lived after increasing the WFPS. If plants were driving denitrification by providing heterotrophs with C substrates one might have expected a more prolonged  $N_2O$  flux. The data obtained previously in Chapter 4 from the *LF* soil (Figure 4.2a) showed that the fraction of  $R_S$  derived from root-C increased substantially as  $T_S$  increased. Future experiments need to also measure the  $N_2$  flux and a higher  $^{15}N$  enrichment on the urine-N would enable

this and could help explain the reduction in  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  at relatively high WFPS. Repetition of such an experiment would warrant an examination of the soil microbial pool for atom %  $^{15}\text{N}$  and  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  in order to establish where it was resourcing its substrate supply and the relative contributions of the urine-N and plant-derived C.

A previous pilot study (data not presented here) performed as an honours project showed decreasing atom%  $^{15}\text{N}$  enrichment of the  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  flux as  $T_s$  were increased following a urea application. This was thought to be due to mineralized soil N increasing its contribution to the  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  flux as soil warmed. I have expected to see a similar result in the current study but in retrospect the lack of such a result may be due to soil type. The pilot study used a more fertile soil where as this study used a low fertility soil. I would like to repeat this type of study with different soil types, varying in fertility (e.g. the *HF* soil in Chapter 3 and 4) to see if the contribution of soil-N to  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  is in fact soil specific (fertility related) and how it changes with temperature. If soil C is mineralized so too must be the soil-N it's a question of whether or not it goes into the soil microbial pool or the  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  flux. Again though if we note the earlier result (Figure 4.2a), where  $R_{\text{OM}}$  in the *LF* soil was relatively insensitive to  $T_s$  increase, it is perhaps not surprising we saw no increase in soil-N contributions to the  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  flux as  $T_s$  increased.

With respect to the  $\text{CO}_2$  fluxes there was a progressive shift from an abiotic hydrolysis induced mechanism to heterotrophic mechanisms, in the urine treatments, with the shift occurring more rapidly as  $T_s$  increased. This temperature effect was strong and the use of  $T_s$  to predict this effect could be useful in future studies that try to predict the fate of C in pasture systems, given that the soil priming effect was greater at the lower  $T_s$ , which was assumed to be a function of the prolonged elevation of soil pH, which is a direct result of prolonged hydrolysis.

The isotopic  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  data clearly supported this shift in  $\text{CO}_2$  source, in the urine treatments. In future studies however, more sampling events need be included in the programme. The use of  $\text{C}_3$  and  $\text{C}_4$  soils in conjunction with  $\text{C}_3$  and  $\text{C}_4$  pasture species provides an exciting system for research. However, it is not without possible artefacts. The grasses used here both are of similar biochemical composition compared to a ryegrass versus maize comparison, where maize has more recalcitrant C. Thus, so long as the sites have had a long history of paspalum or kikuyu ( $\text{C}_4$  pasture species) and ryegrass ( $\text{C}_3$  pasture species) use then the soil organic matter loadings should be similar in terms of quality. However, because the soils used here (*LF* and *HF*) were of different parent material we cannot rule out that factors other than general nutritional fertility influenced soil microbial responses to treatments applied. In an

ideal situation if the experimental ‘set-up’ was repeated a common parent material would be included in the soil selection criteria.

Hence Chapter 4 was performed based on the assumption that soil parent material and plant type did not affect the temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$  and I only focused on the soil nutrient status. To test the validity of this assumption, further work needs to be performed using two soils with contrasting nutrient status but from the same location and of the same soil type.

## 6.2 General comments

- The experiments conducted in this thesis were also constrained by the availability of growth cabinets hence, the number of treatment temperatures were 3 or 4 for each experiment. Because of the limited number of treatment temperatures, uncertainties around mean values are higher than I would have liked. For example, in Chapter 5, the highest magnitude of urine-induced priming of soil C was observed at an intermediate temperature (19°C). However, because this experiment had only three treatment temperatures, the relationship between the urine-induced priming of soil C and temperature could not be clearly described. A model was used to estimate the effect of  $T_S$  on soil processes but the uncertainties with regards to the model fitting could be reduced if future studies are performed using a higher number of treatment temperatures.
- In Chapter 3 and 4, soils were pre-conditioned for 7 days at their appropriate treatment temperature before the measurements of  $R_S$  commenced. It was reported that soil microbes could adapt to their temperature condition during a pre-conditioning period, and that this phenomena could change the apparent temperature sensitivity of  $R_S$ . Hence, further study is needed to investigate the microbial adaptation to different temperatures. However, the current studies were performed using soils with live plants hence plant growth was another factor to consider when determining the pre-conditioning period. Plants grew faster at higher temperature hence the pre-conditioning period had to be kept short to minimize the difference in plant biomass among treatment temperatures. Future studies need to consider these issues.
- The experiment in Chapter 4 was performed using two soils; the low (*LF*) and high fertility (*HF*) soils. However, the first experiment (Chapter 3) was conducted only using the *HF* soil and the third experiment (Chapter 5) was performed only using the *LF* soil. This was because the first experiment had to be started within 4 h of soil sampling and this was impossible to perform the experiment in this way using the *LF* soil, which was



obtained from 700 km north of Lincoln University, where I performed the experiment. Also, for the first experiment, because locally available cow urine was only  $C_3$  labelled, I only had the option of using the *LF* soil, which was a  $C_4$  soil to investigate the contribution of urine-C to soil respiration. Thus, further work can be performed, by developing the third experiment, to investigate the magnitude of urine-induced priming effect in a high fertility soil.

## References

- Abdalla, M., M. Jones, P. Smith, and M. Williams. 2009. Nitrous oxide fluxes and denitrification sensitivity to temperature in Irish pasture soils. *Soil Use and Management* 25:376-388.
- Allard, V., C. Robin, P.C.D. Newton, M. Lieffering, and J.F. Soussana. 2006. Short and long-term effects of elevated CO<sub>2</sub> on *Lolium perenne* rhizodeposition and its consequences on soil organic matter turnover and plant N yield. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 38:1178-1187.
- Allard, V., P.C.D. Newton, M. Lieffering, J.F. Soussana, R.A. Carran, and C. Matthew. 2005. Increased quantity and quality of coarse soil organic matter fraction at elevated CO<sub>2</sub> in a grazed grassland are a consequence of enhanced root growth rate and turnover. *Plant and Soil* 276:49-60.
- Amador, J.A., and R.D. Jones. 1993. Nutrient limitations on microbial respiration in peat soils with different total phosphorus content. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 25:793-801.
- Ambus, P., S.O. Peterson, and J.F. Soussana. 2007. Short-term carbon and nitrogen cycling in urine patches assessed by combined carbon-13 and nitrogen-15 labelling. *Agriculture, Ecosystems & Environment* 121:84-92.
- Amundson, R. 2001. The carbon budget in soils. *Annual Review of Earth and Planetary Sciences* 29:535-561.
- Anderson, I.C., and J.S. Levine. 1986. Relative rates of nitric oxide and nitrous oxide production by nitrifiers, denitrifiers, and nitrate respirers. *Applied Environmental Microbiology* 51:938-945.
- Anderson, T.W., and D.A. Darling. 1952. Asymptotic theory of certain "goodness of fit" criteria based on stochastic processes. *The Annals of Mathematical Statistics* 23:193-212.
- Arrhenius, S. 1898. The effect of constant influences upon physiological relationships. *Scandinavian Archives of Physiology* 8:367-415.
- Atkin, O.K., D. Bruhn, V.M. Hurry, and M.G. Tjoelker. 2005. The hot and the cold: unravelling the variable response of plant respiration to temperature. *Functional Plant Biology* 32:87-105.
- Avalakki, U.K., W.M. Strong, and P.G. Saffigna. 1995. Measurements of gaseous emissions from denitrification of applied nitrogen-15. II. Effects of temperature and added straw. *Australian Journal of Soil Research* 33:89-99.
- Avnimelech, Y., and M. Laher. 1977. Ammonia Volatilization From Soils: Equilibrium Considerations. *Soil Science Society of America Journal* 41:1080-1084.
- Azam, F., C. Müller, A. Weiske, G. Benckiser, and J.C.G. Ottow. 2002. Nitrification and denitrification as sources of atmospheric nitrous oxide – role of oxidizable carbon and applied nitrogen. *Biology and Fertility of Soils* 35:54-61.
- Bader, N.E., and W. Cheng. 2007. Rhizosphere priming effect of *Populus fremontii* obscures the temperature sensitivity of soil organic carbon respiration. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 39:600-606.
- Bailey, L.D. 1976. Effects of temperature and root on denitrification in a soil. *Canadian Journal of Soil Science* 56:79-87.
- Balesdent, J., A. Mariotti, and B. Guillet. 1987. Natural <sup>13</sup>C abundance as a tracer for studies of soil organic matter dynamics. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 19:25-30.
- Bardgett, R.D., and D.A. Wardle. 2003. Herbivore-Mediated Linkages between Aboveground and Belowground Communities. *Ecology* 84:2258-2268.
- Bardgett, R.D., C. Freeman, and N.J. Ostle. 2008. Microbial contributions to climate change through carbon cycle feedbacks. *Multidisciplinary Journal of Microbial Ecology* 2:805-814.

- Bardgett, R.D., R.D. Lovell, P.J. Hobbs, and S.C. Jarvis. 1999. Seasonal changes in soil microbial communities along a fertility gradient of temperate grasslands. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 31:1021-1030.
- Bekku, Y.S., T. Nakatsubo, A. Kume, M. Adachi, and H. Koizumi. 2003. Effect of warming on the temperature dependence of soil respiration rate in arctic, temperate and tropical soils. *Applied Soil Ecology* 22:205-210.
- Bender, M.M. 1968. Mass spectrometric studies of carbon-13 variations in corn and other grasses. *Radiocarbon* 10:468-472.
- Berg, B., B. Wessén, and G. Ekbohm. 1982. Nitrogen Level and Decomposition in Scots Pine Needle Litter. *Oikos* 38:291-296.
- Bingeman, C.W., J.E. Varner, and W.P. Martin. 1953. The effect of the addition of organic materials on the decomposition of an organic soil. *Soil Science Society of America Proceedings* 29:692-696.
- Blackmer, A.M., and J.M. Bremner. 1977. Nitrification of fertilizer nitrogen in soils as a source of atmospheric N<sub>2</sub>O. *Agronomy Abstract*:146.
- Blagodatskaya, E., and Y. Kuzyakov. 2008. Mechanisms of real and apparent priming effects and their dependence on soil microbial biomass and community structure: critical review. *Biology and Fertility of Soils* 45:115-131.
- Bokhari, U.G., and J.S. Singh. 1974. Effects of Temperature and Clipping on Growth, Carbohydrate Reserves, and Root Exudation of Western Wheatgrass in Hydroponic Culture. *Crop Science* 14:790-794.
- Bol, R., T. Bolger, and T. Cully. 2003. Recalcitrant soil organic materials mineralize more efficiently at higher temperatures. *Journal of Plant Nutrition and Soil Science* 166:300-307.
- Bol, R., S.O. Petersen, C. Christofides, K. Dittert, and M.N. Hansen. 2004. Short-term N<sub>2</sub>O, CO<sub>2</sub>, NH<sub>3</sub> fluxes, and N/C transfers in a Danish grass-clover pasture after simulated urine deposition in autumn. *Journal of Plant Nutrition and Soil Science* 167:568-576.
- Bond-Lamberty, B., C. Wang, and S.T. Gower. 2004. A global relationship between the heterotrophic and autotrophic components of soil respiration? *Global Change Biology* 10:1756-1766.
- Bosatta, E., and G.I. Ågren. 1999. Soil organic matter quality interpreted thermodynamically. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 31:1889-1891.
- Boutton, T.W., S.R. Archer, and A.J. Midwood. 1999. Stable isotopes in ecosystem science: structure, function and dynamics of a subtropical savanna. *Rapid Communications in Mass Spectrometry* 13:1263-1277.
- Bouwman, A.F. 1998. Environmental science - Nitrogen oxides and tropical agriculture. *Nature* 392:866-867.
- Bowling, D.R., S.D. Sargent, B.D. Tanner, and J.R. Ehleringer. 2003. Tunable diode laser absorption spectroscopy for stable isotope studies of ecosystem-atmosphere CO<sub>2</sub> exchange. *Agricultural and Forest Meteorology* 118:1-19.
- Boyer, J.N., and P.M. Groffman. 1996. Bioavailability of water extractable organic carbon fractions in forest and agricultural soil profiles. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 28:783-790.
- Bradford, M.A., C.A. Davies, S.D. Frey, T.R. Maddox, J.M. Melillo, J.E. Mohan, J.F. Reynolds, K.K. Treseder, and M.D. Wallenstein. 2008. Thermal adaptation of soil microbial respiration to elevated temperature. *Ecology Letters* 11:1316-1327.
- Bremer, E., and P. Kuikman. 1997. Influence of competition for nitrogen in soil on net mineralization of nitrogen. *Plant and Soil* 190:119-126.
- Bremner, J.M., and K. Shaw. 1958. Denitrification in soil. II. Factors affecting denitrification. *Journal of Agricultural Science* 51:40-52.

- Bronson, K.F., G.P. Sparling, and I.R.P. Fillery. 1999. Short-term N dynamics following application of  $^{15}\text{N}$ -labeled urine to a sandy soil in summer. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 31:1049-1057.
- Brown, M., D. Whitehead, J.E. Hunt, T.J. Clough, G.C. Arnold, W.T. Baisden, and R.R. Sherlock. 2009. Regulation of soil surface respiration in a grazed pasture in New Zealand. *Agricultural and Forest Meteorology* 149:205-213.
- Burford, J.R., and J.M. Bremner. 1975. Relationships between the denitrification capacities of soils and total, water-soluble and readily decomposable soil organic matter. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 7:389-394.
- Burton, A.J., K.S. Pregitzer, and R.L. Hendrick. 2000. Relationships between fine root dynamics and nitrogen availability in Michigan northern hardwood forests. *Oecologia* 125:389-399.
- Bussink, D.W., and O. Oenema. 1998. Ammonia volatilization from dairy farming systems in temperate areas: a review. *Nutrient Cycling in Agroecosystem* 51:19-33.
- Butler, J.L., P.J. Bottomley, S.M. Griffis, and D.D. Myrold. 2004. Distribution and turnover of recently fixed photosynthate in ryegrass rhizospheres. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 36:371-382.
- Buyer, J.S., D.P. Roberts, and E. Russek-Cohen. 2002. Soil and plant effects on microbial community structure. *Canadian Journal of Microbiology* 48:955-964.
- Bååth, E., and H. Wallander. 2003. Soil and rhizosphere microorganisms have the same  $Q_{10}$  for respiration in a model system. *Global Change Biology* 9:1788-1791.
- Cabrera, M.L., and D.E. Kissel. 1989. Review and simplification of calculations in  $^{15}\text{N}$  tracer studies. *Fertilizer Research* 20:11-15.
- Carter, M., K. Klumpp, and X. Le Roux. 2006. Lack of increased availability of root-derived C may explain the low  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emission from low N-urine patches. *Nutrient Cycling in Agroecosystems* 75:91-100.
- Carter, M.S. 2007. Contribution of nitrification and denitrification to  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions from urine patches. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 39:2091-2102.
- Chalamat, A. 1985. Effects of environmental factors on denitrification, p. 7-29, *In* H. L. Golterman, ed. *Denitrification in the Nitrogen Cycle*. Plenum Press, New York.
- Cheng, W., D.W. Johnson, and S. Fu. 2003. Rhizosphere effects on decomposition: controls of plant species, phenology, and fertilization. *Soil Science Society of America Journal* 67:1418-1427.
- Cheng, W.X. 1996. Measurement of rhizosphere respiration and organic matter decomposition using natural C-13. *Plant and Soil* 183:263-268.
- Christensen, J.H., B. Hewitson, A. Busuioac, A. Chen, X. Gao, I. Held, R. Jones, R.K. Kolli, W.-T. Kwon, R. Laprise, V. Magaña Rueda, L. Mearns, C.G. Menéndez, J. Räisänen, A. Rinke, A. Sarr and P. Whetton. 2007. Regional Climate Projections *In* S. Solomon, D. Qin, M. Manning, Z. Chen, M. Marquis, K.B. Averyt, M. Tignor and H.L. Miller, ed. *Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change*. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, United Kingdom and New York, NY, USA.
- Christensen, T.R., S. Jonasson, T.V. Callaghan, and M. Havström. 1999. On the potential  $\text{CO}_2$  release from tundra soils in a changing climate. *Applied Soil Ecology* 11:127-134.
- Clough, T.J., and F.M. Kelliher. 2005. Dairy farm effluent effects on urine patch nitrous oxide and carbon dioxide emissions. *Journal of Environmental Quality* 34:979-986.

- Clough, T.J., R.R. Sherlock, and F.M. Kelliher. 2003. Can liming mitigate N<sub>2</sub>O fluxes from a urine-amended soil? *Australian Journal of Soil Research* 41:439-457.
- Clough, T.J., R.R. Sherlock, K.C. Cameron, and S.F. Ledgard. 1996. Fate of urine nitrogen on mineral and peat soils in New Zealand. *Plant and Soil* 178:141-152.
- Clough, T.J., S.F. Ledgard, M.S. Sprosen, and M.J. Kear. 1998. Fate of <sup>15</sup>N labelled urine on four soil types. *Plant and Soil* 199:195-203.
- Clough, T.J., F.M. Kelliher, R.R. Sherlock, and C.D. Ford. 2004. Lime and soil moisture effects on nitrous oxide emissions from a urine patch. *Soil Science Society of America Journal* 68:1600-1609.
- Clough, T.J., J.L. Ray, L.E. Buckthought, J. Calder, D. Baird, M. O'Callaghan, R.R. Sherlock, and L.M. Condron. 2009. The mitigation potential of hippuric acid on N<sub>2</sub>O emissions from urine patches: An in situ determination of its effect. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 41:2222-2229.
- Conen, F., J. Leifeld, B. Seth, and C. Alewell. 2006. Warming mineralises young and old soil carbon equally. *Biogeosciences* 3:515-519.
- Conrad, R. 1996. Soil microorganisms as controllers of atmospheric trace gases (H<sub>2</sub>, CO, CH<sub>4</sub>, OCS, N<sub>2</sub>O, and NO). *Microbiology and Molecular Biology Reviews* 60:609-640.
- Cornish, P.S. 1993. Soil macrostructure and root growth of establishing seedlings. *Plant and Soil* 151:119-126.
- Cox, P.M., R.A. Betts, C.D. Jones, S.A. Spall, and I.J. Totterdell. 2000. Acceleration of global warming due to carbon-cycle feedbacks in a coupled climate model. *Nature* 408:184-187.
- Craine, J.M., D.A. Wedin, and F.S. Chapin. 1999. Predominance of ecophysiological controls on soil CO<sub>2</sub> flux in a Minnesota grassland. *Plant and Soil* 207:77-86.
- Crutzen, P.J. 1970. The influence of nitrogen oxides on the atmospheric ozone content. *Quarterly Journal of Royal Meteorological Society* 96:320-325.
- Davidson, E.A., and A.R. Mosier. 2004. Controlling losses to air, p. 251-259, *In* D. J. Hatch, et al., eds. *Controlling nitrogen flows and losses*. Wageningen Academic Publishers, Wageningen.
- Davidson, E.A., and I.A. Janssens. 2006. Temperature sensitivity of soil carbon decomposition and feedbacks to climate change. *Nature* 440:165-173.
- Davidson, E.A., L.F. Galloway, and M.K. Strand. 1987. Assessing available carbon: Comparison of techniques across selected forest soils. *Communications in Soil Science and Plant Analysis* 18:45-64.
- Davidson, E.A., I.A. Janssens, and Y. Luo. 2006. On the variability of respiration in terrestrial ecosystems: moving beyond Q<sub>10</sub>. *Global Change Biology* 12:154-164.
- Day, T.A., and J.K. Detling. 1990. Grassland Patch Dynamics and Herbivore Grazing Preference Following Urine Deposition. *Ecology* 71:180-188.
- de Graaff, M.A., K.J. van Groenigen, J. Six, B. Hungatte, and C. van Kessel. 2006. Interactions between plant growth and soil nutrient cycling under elevated CO<sub>2</sub>: a meta-analysis. *Global Change Biology* 12:2077-2091.
- de Klein, C.A.M., and R.S.P. Van Logtestijn. 1996. Denitrification in grassland soils in the netherlands in relation to irrigation, N-application rate, soil water content and soil temperature. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 28:231-237.
- de Klein, C.A.M., R.R. Sherlock, K.C. Cameron, and T.J. van der Weerden. 2001. Nitrous oxide emissions from agricultural soils in New Zealand - a review of current knowledge and directions for future research. *Journal of The Royal Society of New Zealand* 31:543-574.

- Delwiche, C.C., and B.A. Bryan. 1976. Denitrification. *Annual Review of Microbiology* 30:241-262.
- Denman, K.L., G. Brasseur, A. Childthaisong, P. Ciais, P.M. Cox, R.E. Dickinson, D. Hauglustaine, C. Heinze, E. Holland, D. Jacob, U. Lohmann, S. Ramachandran, P.L. da Silva Dias, S.C. Wofsy, and X. Zhang. 2007. Couplings Between Changes in the Climate System and Biogeochemistry., *In* S. Solomon, et al., eds. *Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change*. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, United Kingdom and New York, NY, USA.
- Dijkstra, F.A., W. Cheng, and D.W. Johnson. 2006. Plant biomass influences rhizosphere priming effects on soil organic matter decomposition in two differently managed soils. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 38:2519-2526.
- Doak, B.W. 1952. Some chemical changes in the nitrogenous constituents of urine when voided on pasture. *Journal of Agricultural Science* 42:162-171.
- Domanski, G., Y. Kuzyakov, S.V. Siniakina, and K. Stahr. 2001. Carbon flows in the rhizosphere of ryegrass (*Lolium perenne*). *Journal of Plant Nutrition and Soil Science* 164:381-387.
- Dormaar, J.F. 1990. Effects of active roots on the decomposition of soil organic materials. *Biological Fertility of Soils* 10:121-126.
- During, C., and K.J. McNaught. 1961. Effects of cow urine on growth of pasture and uptake of nutrients. *New Zealand Journal of Agricultural Research* 4:591-605.
- Ekblad, A., and P. Högborg. 2001. Natural abundance of  $^{13}\text{C}$  in  $\text{CO}_2$  respired from forest soils reveals speed of link between tree photosynthesis and root respiration. *Oecologia* 127:305-308.
- Elgersma, A., and J. Hassink. 1997. Effects of white clover (*Trifolium repens* L.) on plant and soil nitrogen and soil organic matter in mixtures with perennial ryegrass (*Lolium perenne* L.). *Plant and Soil* 197:177-186.
- Fang, C., and J.B. Moncrieff. 2001. The dependence of soil  $\text{CO}_2$  efflux on temperature. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 33:155-165.
- Feng, X., and M.J. Simpson. 2009. Temperature and substrate controls on microbial phospholipid fatty acid composition during incubation of grassland soils contrasting in organic matter quality. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 41:804-812.
- Firestone, M.K. 1982. Biological denitrification. *Agronomy Monograph* 22:289-326.
- Fitter, A.H., J.D. Graves, G.K. Self, T.K. Brown, D.S. Bogie, and K. Taylor. 1998. Root production, turnover and respiration under two grassland types along an altitudinal gradient: influence of temperature and solar radiation. *Oecologia* 114:20-30.
- Flanagan, L.B., and B.G. Johnson. 2005. Interacting effects of temperature, soil moisture and plant biomass production on ecosystem respiration in a northern temperate grassland. *Agricultural and Forest Meteorology* 130:237-253.
- Flechard, C.R., P. Ambus, U. Skiba, R.M. Rees, A. Hensen, A. van Amstel, A. van den Pol-van Dassellar, J.F. Soussana, M. Jones, J. Clifton-Brown, A. Raschi, L. Horvath, A. Neftel, M. Jocher, C. Ammann, J. Leifeld, J. Furrer, P. Calance, E. Thalman, K. Pilegaard, C. Di Marco, C. Campbell, E. Nemitz, K.J. Hargreaves, P.E. Levy, B.C. Ball, S.K. Jones, W.C.M. van de Bulk, T. Groot, M. Blom, R. Domingues, G. Kasper, V. Allard, E. Ceschia, P. Cellier, P. Laville, C. Henault, F. Bizouard, M. Abdalla, M. Williams, S. Baronti, F. Berretti, and B. Grosz. 2007. Effects of climate and management intensity on nitrous oxide emissions in grassland systems across Europe. *Agriculture, Ecosystems & Environment* 121:135-152.

- Flessa, H., R. Ruser, P. Dörsch, T. Kamp, M.A. Jimenez, J.C. Munch, and F. Beese. 2002. Integrated evaluation of greenhouse gas emissions (CO<sub>2</sub>, CH<sub>4</sub>, N<sub>2</sub>O) from two farming systems in southern Germany. *Agriculture, Ecosystems & Environment* 91:175-189.
- Focht, D.D., and W. Verstraete. 1977. Biochemical ecology of nitrification and denitrification. *Advanced Microbial Ecology* 1:135-214.
- Follett, R.F., J.M. Kimble, and R. Lal. 2001. The potential of U.S. grazing lands to sequester soil carbon, p. 401-432, *In* R. F. Follett, et al., eds. *The Potential of U.S. Grazing Lands to Sequester Carbon and Mitigate the Greenhouse Effect*. CRC Press, United States of America.
- Fontaine, S., A. Mariotti, and L. Abbadie. 2003. The priming effect of organic matter: a question of microbial competition? *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 35:837-843.
- Forster, P., V. Ramaswamy, P. Artaxo, T. Bernsten, R. Betts, D.W. Fahey, J. Haywood, J. Lean, D.C. Lowe, G. Myhre, J. Nganga, R. Prinn, G. Raga, S. Mand, and R. Van Dorland. 2007. Changes in Atmospheric Constituents and in Radiative Forcing, *In* S. Solomon, et al., eds. *Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change*. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, United Kingdom and New York, NY, USA.
- Fowler, D., U. Skiba, and K.J. Hargreaves. 1997. Emissions of nitrous oxide from grasslands., p. 147-164, *In* S. C. Jarvis and B. F. Pain, eds. *Gaseous Nitrogen Emissions from Grasslands*. Cab International, Wallingford, UK.
- Gao, J.-Q., H. Ouyang, X.-L. Xu, C.-P. Zhou, and F. Zhang. 2009. Effects of Temperature and Water Saturation on CO<sub>2</sub> Production and Nitrogen Mineralization in Alpine Wetland Soils. *Pedosphere* 19:71-77.
- Garwood, E.A. 1967. Studies on the roots of grasses. *Annual Report 1966*, Grassland Research Institute, Hurley:72-9.
- Gaudinski, J.B., S.E. Trumbore, E.A. Davidson, and S. Zheng. 2000. Soil carbon cycling in a temperate forest: radiocarbon-based estimates of residence times, sequestration rates and partitioning of fluxes. *Biogeochemistry* 51:33-69.
- Ghani, A., M. Dextor, and K.W. Perrott. 2003. Hot-water extractable carbon in soils: a sensitive measurement for determining impacts of fertilisation, grazing and cultivation. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 35:1231-1243.
- Grable, A.R. 1971. Effects of compaction on content and transmission of air in soils, p. 154-164, *In* K. K. Barnes, et al., eds. *Compaction of Agricultural Soils*. the American Society of Agricultural Engineers, St. Joseph.
- Gu, L., W.M. Post, and A.W. King. 2004. Fast labile carbon turnover obscures sensitivity of heterotrophic respiration from soil to temperature: a model analysis. *Global Biogeochemical Cycles* 18:1022-1032.
- Gödde, M., and R. Conrad. 1999. Immediate and adaptational temperature effects on nitric oxide production and nitrous oxide release from nitrification and denitrification in two soils. *Biology and Fertility of Soils* 30:33-40.
- Hadas, A., S. Feigenbaum, A. Feigin, and R. Portnoy. 1986. Distribution of nitrogen forms and availability indices in profiles of differently managed soil types. *Soil Science Society of America Journal* 50:308-313.
- Hamer, U., and B. Marschner. 2005. Priming effects in different soil types induced by fructose, alanine, oxalic acid and catechol additions. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 37:445-454.
- Hanson, P.J., N.T. Edwards, C.T. Garten, and J.A. Andrews. 2000. Separating root and soil microbial contributions to soil respiration: a review of methods and observations. *Biogeochemistry* 48:115-146.

- Hantschel, R.E., T. Kamp, and F. Beese. 1995. Increasing the soil temperature to study global warming effects on the soil nitrogen cycle in agroecosystems. *Journal of Biogeography* 22:375-380.
- Hartley, I.P., and P. Ineson. 2008. Substrate quality and the temperature sensitivity of soil organic matter decomposition. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 40:1567-1574.
- Hartley, I.P., D.W. Hopkins, M.H. Garnett, M. Sommerkorn, and P.A. Wookey. 2008. Soil microbial respiration in arctic soil does not acclimate to temperature. *Ecology Letters* 11:1092-1100.
- Hauck, R.D., and S.W. Melstead. 1956. Some aspects of the problem of evaluating denitrification in soils. *Soil Science Society of America Proceedings* 20:361-364.
- Haynes, R.J. 2000. Labile organic matter as an indicator of organic matter quality in arable and pastoral soils in New Zealand. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 32:211-219.
- Haynes, R.J., and P.H. Williams. 1993. Nutrient cycling and soil fertility in the grazed pasture ecosystem. *Advances in Agronomy* 49:119-199.
- Heilmeyer, H., M. Erhard, and E.D. Schulze. 1997. Biomass allocation and water use under arid conditions., p. 93-112, *In* F. A. Bazzaz and J. Grace, eds. *Plant Resource Allocation*. Academic Press, San Diego, CA.
- Hewitt, A.E. 1993. *New Zealand Soil Classification*. Landcare Research Science Series No. 1., Lincoln, New Zealand.
- Hobbie, S.E., and P.M. Vitousek. 2000. Nutrient limitation of decomposition in Hawaiian forests. *Ecology* 81:1867-1877.
- Hoschstein, L.T., and G.A. Tomlinson. 1988. The enzymes associated with denitrification. *Annual Review of Microbiology* 42:231-261.
- Houghton, R.A., and G.M. Woodwell. 1989. Global climate change. *Scientific American* 260:36-44.
- Howard, D.M., and P.J.A. Howard. 1993. Relationships between CO<sub>2</sub> evolution, moisture content and temperature for a range of soil types. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 25:1537-1546.
- Humphreys, L.R. 1997. *The Evolving Science of Grassland Improvement* Cambridge University Press, U.K.
- Hütsch, B.W., J. Augustin, and W. Merbach. 2002. Plant rhizodeposition - an important source for carbon turnover in soils. *Journal of Plant Nutrition and Soil Science* 165:397-407.
- IPCC. 2007a. *Climate Change 2007: Synthesis Report*. Contribution of Working Groups I, II and III to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change [Core Writing Team, Pachauri, R.K and Reisinger, A. (eds)]. IPCC, Geneva, Switzerland.
- IPCC. 2007b. *Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis*. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change, *In* S. Solomon, et al., eds. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, United Kingdom and New York, NY, USA.
- Islam, A., D. Chen, and R.E. White. 2007. Heterotrophic and autotrophic nitrification in two acid pasture soils. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 39:972-975.
- Jacobson, S.N., and M. Alexander. 1980. Nitrate loss from soil in relation to temperature, carbon source and denitrifier populations. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 12:501-505.
- Jandl, R., and P. Sollins. 1997. Water-extractable soil carbon in relation to the belowground carbon cycle. *Biological Fertility of Soils* 25:196-201.



- Joergensen, R.G., P.C. Brookes, and D.S. Jenkinson. 1990. Survival of the soil microbial biomass at elevated temperatures. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 22:1129-1136.
- John, P. 1977. Aerobic and anaerobic bacterial respiration monitored by electrodes. *Journal of General Microbiology* 98:231-238.
- Johnson, K.A., and D.E. Johnson. 1995. Methane emissions from cattle. *Journal of Animal Science* 73:2483-2492.
- Johnson, M.G., E.E. Levine, and J.S. Kern. 1995. Soil organic matter, distribution, genesis, and management to reduce greenhouse gas emissions. *Water, Air, and Soil Pollution* 82:593-615.
- Keeney, D.R., I.R. Fillery, and G.P. Marx. 1979. Effect of Temperature on the Gaseous Nitrogen Products of Denitrification in a Silt Loam Soil. *Soil Science Society of America Journal* 43:1124-1128.
- Kelliher, F.M., M.M. Barbour, and J.E. Hunt. 2005a. Sucrose application, soil microbial respiration and evolved carbon dioxide isotope enrichment under contrasting land uses. *Plant and Soil* 268:233-242.
- Kelliher, F.M., J.R. Sedcole, I. Emery, and L.M. Condron. 2007. Grassland soil microbial respiration responses to urea and litter applications. *New Zealand Journal of Agricultural Research* 50:321-326.
- Kelliher, F.M., A.R. Reisinger, R.J. Martin, M.J. Harvey, S.J. Price, and R.R. Sherlock. 2002. Measuring nitrous oxide emission rate from grazed pasture using Fourier-transform infrared spectroscopy in the nocturnal boundary layer. *Agricultural and Forest Meteorology* 111:29-38.
- Kelliher, F.M., J.R. Sedcole, R.F. Minchin, Y. Wan, L.M. Condron, T.J. Clough, and R. Bol. 2005b. Soil microbial respiration responses to repeated urea applications in three grasslands. *Australian Journal of Soil Research* 43:905-913.
- Khalil, M.I., and E.M. Baggs. 2005. CH<sub>4</sub> oxidation and N<sub>2</sub>O emissions at varied soil water-filled pore spaces and headspace CH<sub>4</sub> concentrations. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 37:1785-1794.
- Khdyer, I.I., and C.M. Cho. 1983. Nitrification and denitrification of nitrogen fertilizers in a soil column. *Soil Science Society of America Journal* 47:1134-1139.
- Kirschbaum, M.U.F. 1995. The temperature dependence of soil organic matter decomposition, and the effect of global warming on soil organic C storage. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 27:753-760.
- Kirschbaum, M.U.F. 2004. Soil respiration under prolonged soil warming: are rate reductions caused by acclimation or substrate loss? *Global Change Biology* 10:1870-1877.
- Kirschbaum, M.U.F. 2006. The temperature dependence of organic-matter decomposition - still a topic of debate. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 38:2510-2518.
- Kladivko, E.J., and D.R. Keeney. 1987. Soil nitrogen mineralization as affected by water and temperature interactions. *Biology and Fertility of Soils* 5:248-252.
- Klemetsson, L., B.H. Svensson, and T. Rosswall. 1988. Relationship between soil moisture content and nitrous oxide production during nitrification and denitrification. *Biology and Fertility of Soils* 6:106-111.
- Koch, O., D. Tscherko, and E. Kandeler. 2007. Temperature sensitivity of microbial respiration, nitrogen mineralization, and potential soil enzyme activities in organic alpine soils. *Global Biogeochemical Cycles* 21:GB4017.
- Koepf, H. 1953. Die Temperatur/Zeit - Abhängigkeit der Bodenatmung. *Zeitschrift für Pflanzenernährung, Düngung und Bodenkunde* 61:29-48.

- Kononova, M.M. 1966. Soil Organic Matter: Its Nature, Its Role in Soil Formation and in Soil Fertility. Pergamon, Oxford.
- Kortschak, H.P., C.E. Hartt, and G.O. Burr. 1965. Carbon dioxide fixation in sugar cane leaves. *Plant Physiology* 40:209-213.
- Kuzyakov, Y. 2002. Review: Factors affecting rhizosphere priming effects. *Journal of Plant Nutrition and Soil Science* 165:382-396.
- Kuzyakov, Y. 2004. Separation of root and rhizomicrobial respiration by natural  $^{13}\text{C}$  abundance: theoretical approach, advantages, and difficulties. *Eurasian Soil Science* 37:S79-S84.
- Kuzyakov, Y. 2006. Sources of  $\text{CO}_2$  efflux from soil and review of partitioning methods. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 38:425-448.
- Kuzyakov, Y., and W. Cheng. 2001a. Photosynthesis controls of rhizosphere respiration and organic matter decomposition. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 33:1915-1925.
- Kuzyakov, Y., and W. Cheng. 2001b. Photosynthesis controls of rhizosphere respiration and organic matter decomposition. *Soil Biology and Biochemistry* 33:1915-1925.
- Kuzyakov, Y., and R. Bol. 2006. Sources and mechanisms of priming effect induced in two grassland soils amended with slurry and sugar. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 38:747-758.
- Kuzyakov, Y., A. Kretzschmar, and K. Stahr. 1999. Contribution of *Lolium perenne* rhizodeposition to carbon turnover of pasture soil. *Plant and Soil* 213:127-136.
- Kuzyakov, Y., J.K. Friedel, and K. Stahr. 2000. Review of mechanisms and quantification of priming effects. *Soil Biology and Biochemistry* 32:1485-1498.
- Kuzyakov, Y., H. Ehrensberger, and K. Stahr. 2001. Rhizodeposition of *Lolium perenne* on two nitrogen levels and enhance of humus decomposition. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 33:61-75.
- Kyveryga, P.M., A.M. Blackmer, J.W. Ellsworth, and R. Isla. 2004. Soil pH effects on nitrification of fall-applied anhydrous ammonia. *Soil Science Society of America Journal* 68:545-551.
- Larionova, A., D. Saprionov, V. Lopez de Gerenyu, L. Kuznetsova, and V. Kudeyarov. 2006. Contribution of plant root respiration to the  $\text{CO}_2$  emission from soil. *Eurasian Soil Science* 39:1127-1135.
- Ledgard, S.F., K.W. Steele, and W.H.M. Saunders. 1982. Effects of cow urine and its major constituents on pasture properties. *New Zealand Journal of Agricultural Research* 25:61-68.
- Leininger, S., T. Urich, M. Schlöter, L. Schwark, J. Qi, G.W. Nicol, J.I. Prosser, S.C. Schuster, and C. Schleper. 2006. Archaea predominate among ammonia-oxidizing prokaryotes in soils. *Nature London* 442:806-809.
- Letey, J., N. Valoras, A. Hadas, and D.D. Focht. 1980. Effect of air-filled porosity, nitrate concentration, and time on the ratio of  $\text{N}_2\text{O}/\text{N}_2$  evolution during denitrification. *Journal of Environmental Quality* 9:227-231.
- Li, C., S. Frolking, and T.A. Frolking. 1992. A model of nitrous oxide evolution from soil driven by rainfall events: 1. Model structure and sensitivity. *Journal of Geophysical Research* 97:9759-9776.
- Li, C., V. Narayanan, and R.C. Harriss. 1996. Model estimates of nitrous oxide emissions from agricultural lands in the United States. *Global Biogeochemical Cycles* 10:297-396.
- Liljeroth, E., P. Kuikman, and J.A. Van Veen. 1994. Carbon translocation to the rhizosphere of maize and wheat and influence on the turn-over of native soil organic matter at different soil nitrogen levels. *Plant and Soil* 161:233-240.

- Lin, G., J.R. Ehleringer, P.T. Rygielwicz, M.G. Johnson, and D.T. Tingey. 1999. Elevated CO<sub>2</sub> and temperature impacts on different components of soil CO<sub>2</sub> efflux in Douglas-fir terracosms. *Global Change Biology* 5:157-168.
- Linn, D.M., and J.W. Doran. 1984. Effect of water-filled pore space on carbon dioxide and nitrous oxide production in tilled and nontilled soils. *Soil Science Society of America Journal* 48:1267-1272.
- Liu, H.S., H.L. Li, X.G. Han, J.H. Huang, J.X. Sun, and H.Y. Wang. 2006. Respiratory substrate availability plays a crucial role in the response of soil respiration to environmental factors. *Applied Soil Ecology* 32:284-292.
- Lloyd, J., and J.A. Taylor. 1994. On the temperature dependence of soil respiration. *Functional Ecology* 8:315-323.
- Lloyd, J., and G.D. Farquhar. 1996. The CO<sub>2</sub> dependence of photosynthesis, plant growth responses to elevated atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations and their interaction with soil nutrient status. I. general principles and forest ecosystems. *Functional Ecology* 10:4-32.
- Lloyd, J., and G.D. Farquhar. 2008. Effects of rising temperatures and [CO<sub>2</sub>] on the physiology of tropical forest trees. *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society B* 363:1811-1817.
- Long, S.P. 1999. Environmental responses, p. 215-250, *In* R. F. Sage and R. K. Monson, eds. *C4 Plant Biology*. Academic Press, San Diego.
- Lovell, R.D., and S.C. Jarvis. 1996. Effects of urine on soil microbial biomass, methanogenesis, nitrification and denitrification in grassland soils. *Plant and Soil* 186:265-273.
- Lovell, R.D., S.C. Jarvis, and R.D. Bardgett. 1995. Soil microbial biomass and activity in long-term grassland: effects of management changes. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 27:969-975.
- Lucht, W., I.C. Prentice, R.B. Myneni, S. Sitch, P. Friedlingstein, W. Cramer, P. Bousquet, W. Buermann, and B. Smith. 2002. Climatic control of the high-latitude vegetation greening trend and pinatubo effect. *Science* 296:1687-1689.
- Lueken, H., W.L. Hutcheon, and E.A. Paul. 1962. The influence of nitrogen on the decomposition of crop residues in the soil. *Canadian Journal of Soil Science* 42:276-288.
- Luo, J., S.B. Lindsey, and S.F. Ledgard. 2008. Nitrous oxide emissions from animal urine application on a New Zealand pasture. *Biological Fertility of Soils* 44:463-470.
- Luo, Y. 2007. Terrestrial carbon-cycle feedback to climate warming. *Annual Review of Ecology, Evolution, and Systematics* 38:683-712.
- Luo, Y., and X. Zhou. 2006. *Soil respiration and the environment* Academic Press, Oxford, UK.
- Luo, Y., S. Wan, D. Hui, and L.L. Wallace. 2001. Acclimatization of soil respiration to warming in a tall grass prairie. *Nature* 413:622-625.
- Lynch, J.M., and J.M. Whipps. 1990. Substrate flow in the rhizosphere. *Plant and Soil* 129:1-10.
- Lükewille, A., and R.F. Wright. 1997. Experimentally increased soil temperature causes release of nitrogen at a boreal forest catchment in southern Norway. *Global Change Biology* 3:13-21.
- Maag, M., and F.P. Vinther. 1996. Nitrous oxide emission by nitrification and denitrification in different soil types and at different soil moisture contents and temperatures. *Applied Soil Ecology* 4:5-14.
- Manning, P., M. Saunders, R.D. Bardgett, M. Bonkowski, M.A. Bradford, R.J. Ellis, E. Kandeler, S. Marhan, and D. Tscherko. 2008. Direct and indirect effects of

- nitrogen deposition on litter decomposition. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 40:688-698.
- Matson, P.A., and P.M. Vitousek. 1990. Ecosystem approach to a global nitrous oxide budget. *BioScience* 40:667-672.
- Matthew, C., and J.Z. Yang. 1998. Determination of tiller and root appearance in perennial ryegrass (*Lolium perenne*) swards by observation of the tiller axis, and potential application in mechanistic modelling. *New Zealand Journal of Agricultural Research* 41:1-10.
- Mawdsley, J.L., and R.D. Bardgett. 1997. Continuous defoliation of perennial ryegrass (*Lolium perenne*) and white clover (*Trifolium repens*) and associated changes in the microbial population of an upland grassland soil. *Biology and Fertility of Soils* 24:52-58.
- McKenney, D.H., K.F. Shuttleworth, and W.I. Frindlay. 1980. Temperature dependence of nitrous oxide production from brookston clay. *Canadian Journal of Soil Science* 60:665-674.
- McKenzie, B.A., P.D. Kemp, D.J. Moot, C. Matthew, and R.J. Lucas. 1999. Environmental effects on plant growth and development, p. 29-44, *In* J. White and J. Hodgson, eds. *New Zealand Pasture and Crop Science*. Oxford University Press, New York.
- Meehl, G.A., T.F. Stocker, W.D. Collins, P. Friendlingstein, A.T. Gaye, J.M. Gregory, A. Kitoh, R. Knutti, J.M. Murphy, A. Noda, S.C.B. Raper, I.G. Watterson, A.J. Weaver, and Z.C. Zhao. 2007. Global Climate Projections, *In* S. Solomon, et al., eds. *Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change*. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, United Kingdom and New York, NY, USA.
- Meharg, A.A., and K. Killham. 1990. Carbon distribution within the plant and rhizosphere in laboratory and field grown *Lolium perenne* at different stages of development. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 22:471-477.
- Melillo, J.M., J.D. Aber, and J.F. Muratore. 1982. Nitrogen and lignin control of hardwood leaf litter decomposition dynamics. *Ecology* 63:621-626.
- Melillo, J.M., P.A. Steudler, J.D. Aber, K. Newkirk, H. Lux, F.P. Bowles, C. Catricala, A. Magill, T. Ahrens, and S. Morrisseau. 2002. Soil warming and carbon-cycle feedbacks to the climate system. *Science* 298:2173-2176.
- Midwood, A.J., B. Thornton, and P. Millard. 2008. Measuring the <sup>13</sup>C content soil-respired CO<sub>2</sub> using a novel open chamber system. *Rapid Communications in Mass Spectrometry* 22:2073-2081.
- Mikan, C.J., J.P. Schimel, and A.P. Doyle. 2002. Temperature controls of microbial respiration in arctic tundra soils above and below freezing. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 34:1785-1795.
- Millard, P., A.J. Midwood, J.E. Hunt, D. Whitehead, and T.W. Boutton. 2008. Partitioning soil surface CO<sub>2</sub> efflux into autotrophic and heterotrophic components, using natural gradients in soil δ<sup>13</sup>C in an undisturbed savannah soil. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 40:1575-1582.
- Ministry for the Environment. 2008. *Climate Change Effects and Impacts Assessment: A Guidance Manual for Local Government in New Zealand*. Ministry for the Environment, Wellington.
- Mitchell, K.J. 1956. Growth of pasture species under controlled environment. 1. Growth at various levels of constant temperature. *New Zealand Journal of Science and Technology, Section A* 38:203-15.

- Monaghan, R.M., and D. Barraclough. 1993. Nitrous oxide and dinitrogen emissions from urine-affected soil under controlled conditions. *Plant and Soil* 151:127-138.
- Mosier, A., and L. Mack. 1980. Gas chromatographic system for precise, rapid analysis of nitrous oxide. *Soil Science Society of American Journal* 44:1121-1123.
- Moyano, F.E., W.L. Kutsch, and C. Rebmann. 2008. Soil respiration fluxes in relation to photosynthetic activity in broad-leaf and needle-leaf forest stands. *Agricultural and Forest Meteorology* 148:135-143.
- Mäkiranta, P., K. Minkkinen, J. Hytönen, and J. Laine. 2008. Factors causing temporal and spatial variation in heterotrophic and rhizospheric components of soil respiration in afforested organic soil croplands in Finland. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 40:1592-1600.
- Mäkiranta, P., R. Laiho, H. Fritze, J. Hytönen, J. Laine, and K. Minkkinen. 2009. Indirect regulation of heterotrophic peat soil respiration by water level via microbial community structure and temperature sensitivity. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 41:695-703.
- Müller, C., R.R. Sherlock, and P.H. Williams. 1997. Mechanistic model for nitrous oxide emission via nitrification and denitrification. *Biology and Fertility of Soils* 24:231-238.
- Nakadai, T., M. Yokozawa, H. Ikeda, and H. Koizumi. 2002. Diurnal changes of carbon dioxide flux from bare soil in agricultural field in Japan. *Applied Soil Ecology* 19:161-171.
- Nicolardot, B., G. Fauvet, and D. Cheneby. 1994. Carbon and nitrogen cycling through soil microbial biomass at various temperatures. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 26:253-261.
- Nielsen, T.H., and N.P. Revsbech. 1998. Nitrification, denitrification, and N-liberation associated with two types of organic hot-spots in soil. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 30:611-619.
- Nissenbaum, A., and I.R. Kaplan. 1972. Chemical and Isotopic Evidence for the in Situ Origin of Marine Humic Substances. *Limnology and Oceanography* 17:570-582.
- O'Leary, M.H. 1988. Carbon isotopes in photosynthesis. *BioScience* 38:328-336.
- Oenema, O., G.L. Velthof, S. Yamulki, and S.C. Jarvis. 1997. Nitrous oxide emissions from grazed grassland. *Soil Use and Management* 13:288-295.
- Oenema, O., A. Bannink, S.G. Sommer, and G.L. Velthof. 2001. Gaseous nitrogen emissions from livestock farming system, p. 255-289, *In* R. F. Follett and J. L. Hatfield, eds. *Nitrogen in the Environment: Sources, Problems, and Management*. Elsevier Science.
- Oenema, O., N. Wrage, G.L. Velthof, J.W. van Groenigen, J. Dolfing, and P.J. Kuikman. 2005. Trends in global nitrous oxide emissions from animal production systems. *Nutrient Cycling in Agroecosystems* 72:51-65.
- Ohlsson, K.E.A., B. Singh, S. Holm, A. Nordgren, L. Lövdahl, and P. Högberg. 2005. Uncertainties in static closed chamber measurements of the carbon isotopic ratio of soil-respired CO<sub>2</sub>. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 37:2273-2276.
- Ojima, D.S., B.O.M. Dirks, E.P. Genn, C.E. Owensby, and J.O. Scurlock. 1993. Assessment of C budget for grasslands and drylands of the world. *Water Air and Soil Pollution* 70:95-109.
- Olsson, P., S. Linder, R. Giesler, and P. Högberg. 2005. Fertilization of boreal forest reduces both autotrophic and heterotrophic soil respiration. *Global Change Biology* 11:1745-1753.

- Orchard, V.A., F.J. Cook, and D.M. Corderoy. 1992. Field and laboratory studies on the relationship between respiration and moisture of two soils of contrasting fertility status. *Pedobiologia* 36:21-33.
- Parkin, T.B., and J.M. Tiedje. 1984. Application of a soil core method to investigate the effect of oxygen concentration on denitrification. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 16:331-334.
- Parnas, H. 1976. A theoretical explanation of the priming effect based on microbial growth with two limiting substrates. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 8:139-144.
- Parton, W.J., D.S. Schimel, C.V. Cole, and D.S. Ojima. 1987. Analysis of Factors Controlling Soil Organic Matter Levels in Great Plains Grasslands. *Soil Science Society of America Journal* 51:1173-1179.
- Paul, E.A., D. Harris, H.P. Collins, U. Schulthess, and G.P. Robertson. 1999. Evolution of CO<sub>2</sub> and soil carbon dynamics in biologically managed, row-crop agroecosystems. *Applied Soil Ecology* 11:53-65.
- Payne, W.J. 1973. Reduction of nitrogenous oxide by microorganisms. *Bacteriological Reviews* 37:409-452.
- Peacock, J.M. 1975. Temperature and Leaf Growth in *Lolium perenne*. II. The Site of Temperature Perception. *Journal of Applied Ecology* 12:115-123.
- Pendall, E., L. Rustad, and J. Schimel. 2008. Towards a predictive understanding of belowground process responses to climate change: have we moved any closer? *Functional Ecology* 22:937-940.
- Petrie, S., C. Sweeney, C. Cameron, S. Gulliver, K. Tsui, M. Gabriels, D. Austin, K. Cao, A. Pickering, R.R. Palma, W. Hennessy, M. McCurdy, H. Clark, C.A.M. de Klein, G. Rys, S. Wakelin, P. Lane, and A. Whiteford. 2007. New Zealand Greenhouse Gas Inventory 1990-2007, 15 April 2009 ed. Ministry for the Environment, Wellington.  
<http://www.mfe.govt.nz/publications/climate/greenhouse-gas-inventory-2009/html/index.html>.
- Phillips, D.L., and J.W. Gregg. 2001. Uncertainty in source partitioning using stable isotopes. *Oecologia* 127:171-179.
- Phillips, R.P., and T.J. Fahey. 2008. The Influence of Soil Fertility on Rhizosphere Effects in Northern Hardwood Forest Soils. *Soil Science Society of America Journal* 72:453-461.
- Piao, S., P. Ciais, P. Friedlingstein, P. Peylin, M. Reichstein, S. Luyssaert, H. Margolis, J. Fang, A. Barr, A. Chen, A. Grelle, D.Y. Hollinger, T. Laurila, A. Lindroth, A.D. Richardson, and T. Vesala. 2008. Net carbon dioxide losses of northern ecosystems in response to autumn warming. *Nature* 451:49-52.
- Pihlatie, M., E. Syvasalo, A. Simojoki, M. Esala, and K. Regina. 2004. Contribution of nitrification and denitrification of N<sub>2</sub>O production in peat, clay and loamy sand soils under different soil moisture conditions. *Nutrient Cycling in Agroecosystems* 70:135-141.
- Potter, C.S., P.A. Matson, P.M. Vitousek, and E.A. Davidson. 1996. Process modeling of controls on nitrogen trace gas emissions from soils worldwide. *Journal of Geophysical Research* 101:1361-1377.
- Raich, J.W., and K.J. Nadelhoffer. 1989. Belowground carbon allocation in forest ecosystems: global trends. *Ecology* 70:1346-1354.
- Raich, J.W., and W.H. Schlesinger. 1992. The global carbon dioxide flux in soil respiration and its relationship to vegetation and climate. *Tellus B* 44:81-99.
- Raich, J.W., and C.S. Potter. 1995. Global patterns of carbon dioxide emissions from soils. *Global Biogeochemical Cycles* 9:23-26.
- Raich, J.W., and A. Tufekciogul. 2000. Vegetation and soil respiration: Correlations and controls. *Biogeochemistry* 48:71-90.

- Ravishankara, A.R., J.S. Daniel, and R.W. Portmann. 2009. Nitrous Oxide (N<sub>2</sub>O): The Dominant Ozone-Depleting Substance Emitted in the 21st Century. *Science* 326:123-125.
- Redmann, R.E. 1992. Primary productivity, p. 75-94, *In* R. T. Coupland, ed. *Ecosystems of the world: natural grasslands: introduction and western hemisphere*, Vol. 8A. Elsevier, Amsterdam.
- Rey, A., C. Petsikos, P.G. Jarvis, and J. Grace. 2005. Effect of temperature and moisture on rates of carbon mineralization in a Mediterranean oak forest soil under controlled and field conditions. *European Journal of Soil Science* 56:589-599.
- Reynolds, C.M., D.C. Wolf, and J.A. Armbruster. 1985. Factors related to urea hydrolysis in soils. *Soil Science Society of America Journal* 49:104-108.
- Richards, B.N. 1987. *The microbiology of terrestrial ecosystems*. John Wiley & Sons, New York.
- Richardson, A.D., and D.Y. Hollinger. 2005. Statistical modeling of ecosystem respiration using eddy covariance data: Maximum likelihood parameter estimation, and Monte Carlo simulation of model and parameter uncertainty, applied to three simple models. *Agricultural and Forest Meteorology* 131:191-208.
- Robertson, G.P., K.M. Klingensmith, M.J. Klug, E.A. Paul, J.R. Crum, and B.G. Ellis. 1997. Soil resources, microbial activity, and primary production across an agricultural ecosystem. *Ecological Applications* 7:158-170.
- Robinson, D., and C.M. Scrimgeour. 1995. The contribution of plant C to soil CO<sub>2</sub> measured using d<sup>13</sup>C. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 27:1653-1656.
- Rochette, P., L.B. Flanagan, and E.G. Gregorich. 1999. Separating soil respiration into plant and soil components using analyses of the natural abundance of Carbon-13. *Soil Science Society of America Proceedings* 63:1207-1213.
- Rodrigo, A., S. Recous, C. Neel, and B. Mary. 1997. Modelling temperature and moisture effects on C-N transformations in soils: comparison of nine models. *Ecological Modelling* 102:325-339.
- Rovira, P., and V.R. Vallejo. 2002. Labile and recalcitrant pools of carbon and nitrogen in organic matter decomposing at different depths in soil: an acid hydrolysis approach. *Geoderma* 107:109-141.
- Rudaz, A.O., E.A. Davidson, and M.K. Fireston. 1991. Sources of nitrous oxide production following wetting of dry soil. *FEMS Microbiology Letters* 85:117-124.
- Rudaz, A.O., E. Walti, G. Kyburz, P. Lehmann, and J. Fuhrer. 1999. Temporal variation in N<sub>2</sub>O and N<sub>2</sub> fluxes from a permanent pasture in Switzerland in relation to management, soil water content and soil temperature. *Agriculture, Ecosystems & Environment* 73:83-91.
- Ruser, R., H. Flessa, R. Russow, G. Schmidt, F. Buegger, and J.C. Munch. 2006. Emission of N<sub>2</sub>O, N<sub>2</sub> and CO<sub>2</sub> from soil fertilized with nitrate: effect of compaction, soil moisture and rewetting. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 38:263-274.
- Russow, R., C.F. Stange, and H.-U. Neue. 2009. Role of nitrite and nitric oxide in the processes of nitrification and denitrification in soil: results from <sup>15</sup>N tracer experiments. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 41:785-795.
- Rustad, L., J. Campbell, G. Marion, R. Norby, M. Mitchell, A. Hartley, J. Cornelissen, and J. Gurevitch. 2001. A meta-analysis of the response of soil respiration, net nitrogen mineralization, and aboveground plant growth to experimental ecosystem warming. *Oecologia* 126:543-562.

- Rustad, L.E., T.G. Huntington, and R.D. Boone. 2000. Controls on soil respiration: Implications for climate change. *Biogeochemistry* 48:1-6.
- Saggar, S., and C.B. Hedley. 2001. Estimating seasonal and annual carbon inputs, and root decomposition rates in a temperate pasture following field  $^{14}\text{C}$  pulse-labelling. *Plant and Soil* 236:91-103.
- Sakata, T., S. Ishizuka, and M. Takahashi. 2007. Separation of soil respiration into  $\text{CO}_2$  emission sources using  $^{13}\text{C}$  natural abundance in a deciduous broad-leaved forest in Japan. *Soil Science and Plant Nutrition* 53:328-336.
- Sauer, T.J., S.R. Compston, C.P. West, G. Hernandez-Ramirez, E.E. Gbur, and T.B. Parkin. 2009. Nitrous oxide emissions from a bermudagrass pasture: interseeded winter rye and poultry litter. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 41:1417-1424.
- Schimel, D.S. 1995. Terrestrial ecosystems and the carbon cycle. *Global Change Biology* 1:77-91.
- Schimel, D.S., B.H. Braswell, E.A. Holland, R. McKeown, D.S. Ojima, T.H. Painter, W.J. Parton, and A.R. Townsend. 1994. Climatic, edaphic, and biotic controls over storage and turnover of carbon in Soils. *Global Biogeochemical Cycles* 8:279-293.
- Schindlbacher, A., S. Zechmeister-Boltenstern, and K. Butterbach-Bahl. 2004. Effects of soil moisture and temperature on  $\text{NO}$ ,  $\text{NO}_2$ , and  $\text{N}_2\text{O}$  emissions from European forest soils. *Journal of Geophysical Research* 109:D17032.
- Schipper, L.A., W.T. Baisden, R.L. Parfitt, C. Ross, J.J. Clayton, and G. Arnold. 2007. Large losses of soil C and N from soil profiles under pasture in New Zealand during the past 20 years. *Global Change Biology* 13:1138-1144.
- Schlesinger, W.H. 1977. Carbon Balance in Terrestrial Detritus. *Annual Review of Ecology and Systematics* 8:51-81.
- Schulze, E.D., F.M. Kelliher, and C.H. Körner. 1994. Relationships among maximum stomatal conductance, ecosystem surface conductance, carbon assimilation rate, and plant nitrogen nutrition: a global scaling exercise. *Annual Review of Ecology and Systematics* 25:629-660.
- Schuman, G.E., J.D. Reeder, J.T. Manley, R.H. Hart, and W.A. Manley. 1999. Impact of grazing management on the carbon and nitrogen balance of a mixed-grass rangeland. *Ecological Applications* 9:65-71.
- Schönwitz, R., W. Stichler, and H. Ziegler. 1986.  $\delta^{13}\text{C}$  values of  $\text{CO}_2$  from soil respiration on sites with crops of C3 and C4 type of photosynthesis. *Oecologia* 69:305-308.
- Scott-Denton, L.E., T. Rosenstiel, and R.K. Monson. 2006. Differential controls by climate and substrate over the heterotrophic and rhizospheric components of soil respiration. *Global Change Biology* 12:205-216.
- Shamroot, S., L. McDonald, and W.V. Bartholomew. 1968. Rhizo-deposition of organic debris in soil. *Soil Science Society of America Proceedings* 32:817-820.
- Shand, C.A., M. Williams, L.A. Dawson, S. Smith, and M.E. Young. 2002. Sheep urine affects soil solution nutrient composition and roots: differences between field and sward box soils and the effects of synthetic and natural sheep urine. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 34:163-171.
- Sherlock, R.R., and K.M. Goh. 1984. Dynamics of ammonia volatilization from simulated urine patches and aqueous urea applied to pasture I. Field experiments. *Fertilizer Research* 5:181-195.
- Sikora, L.J., and J.L. McCoy. 1990. Attempts to determine available carbon in soils. *Biology and Fertility of Soils* 9:19-24.



- Singh, J.S., and S.R. Gupta. 1977. Plant decomposition and soil respiration in terrestrial ecosystems. *Botanical Review* 43:449-528.
- Singh, K.P., N. Ghoshal, and S. Singh. 2009. Soil carbon dioxide flux, carbon sequestration and crop productivity in a tropical dryland agroecosystem: influence of organic inputs of varying resource quality. *Applied Soil Ecology* 42:243-253.
- Six, J., R.T. Conant, E.A. Paul, and K. Paustian. 2002. Stabilization mechanisms of soil organic matter: Implications for C-saturation of soils. *Plant and Soil* 241:155-176.
- Skopp, J., M.D. Jawson, and J.W. Doran. 1990. Steady-state aerobic microbial activity as a function of soil water content. *Soil Science Society of America Journal* 54:1619-1625.
- Smith, K.A. 1997. The potential for feedback effects induced by global warming on emissions of nitrous oxide by soil. *Global Change Biology* 3:327-338.
- Smith, K.A., T. Ball, F. Conen, K.E. Dobbie, J. Massheder, and A. Rey. 2003. Exchange of greenhouse gases between soil and atmosphere: interactions of soil physical factors and biological processes. *European Journal of Soil Science* 54:779-791.
- Soil Survey Staff. 1998. 'Keys to Soil Taxonomy.' 8th edn United States Department of Agriculture, Natural Resources Conservation Service, Washington, DC.
- Song, C., and J. Zhang. 2009. Effects of soil moisture, temperature, and nitrogen fertilization on soil respiration and nitrous oxide emission during maize growth period in northeast China. *Acta Agricultura Scandinavica. Section B, Plant Soil Science* 59:97-106.
- Sparling, G., M. Vojvodic-Vukovic, and L.A. Schipper. 1998. Hot-water-soluble C as A simple measure of labile soil organic matter: the relationship with microbial biomass C. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 30:1469-1472.
- Stanford, G., M.H. Frere, and D.H. Schwaninger. 1973. Temperature coefficient of soil nitrogen mineralization. *Soil Science* 115:321-323.
- Stark, J.M. 1996. Modeling the temperature response of nitrification. *Biogeochemistry* 35:433-445.
- Ste-Marie, C., and D. Paré. 1999. Soil, pH and N availability effects on net nitrification in the forest floors of a range of boreal forest stands. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 31:1579-1589.
- Steinweg, J.M., A.F. Plante, R.T. Conant, E.A. Paul, and D.L. Tanaka. 2008. Patterns of substrate utilization during long-term incubations at different temperatures. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 40:2722-2728.
- Stevens, R.J., R.J. Laughlin, G.J. Atkins, and S.J. Prosser. 1993. Automated determination of nitrogen-15-labelled dinitrogen and nitrous oxide by mass spectrometry. *Soil Science Society of America Journal* 57:981-988.
- Struwe, S., and A. Kjoller. 1991. Denitrification in wet forest soil systems in situ and in slurry experiments. *Forest Ecology and Management* 44:41-52.
- Tang, J., and D.D. Baldocchi. 2005. Spatial-temporal variation in soil respiration in an oak-grass savanna ecosystem in California and its partitioning into autotrophic and heterotrophic components. *Biogeochemistry* 73:183-207.
- Tans, P. 2009. NOAA/ESRL ([www.esrl.noaa.gov/gmd/ccgg/trends/](http://www.esrl.noaa.gov/gmd/ccgg/trends/)).
- Tate, K.R., N.A. Scott, A. Parshotam, L. Brown, R.H. Wilde, D.J. Giltrap, N.A. Trustrum, B. Gomez, and D.J. Ross. 2000. A multi-scale analysis of a terrestrial carbon budget: is New Zealand a source or sink of carbon. *Agriculture, Ecosystems & Environment* 82:229-246.

- Thompson, R.B., and I.R.P. Fillery. 1997. Transformation in soil and turnover to wheat of nitrogen from components of grazed pasture in the south of Western Australia. *Australian Journal of Agricultural Research* 48:1033-1047.
- Thomsen, I.K., B.M. Petersen, S. Bruun, L.S. Jensen, and B.T. Christensen. 2008. Estimating soil C loss potentials from the C to N ratio. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 40:849-852.
- Thornley, J.H.M. 1970. Respiration, growth and maintenance in plants. *Nature* 227:304-305.
- Thornley, J.H.M., and M.G.R. Cannell. 1997. Temperate grassland responses to climate change: an analysis using the Hurley pasture model. *Annals of Botany* 80:205-221.
- Tiedje, J.M. 1988. Ecology of denitrification and dissimilatory nitrate reduction to ammonium, p. 179–244, *In* A. J. B. Zehnder, ed. *Biology of anaerobic microorganisms*. Wiley, New York.
- Tiemann, L.K., and S.A. Billings. 2008. Carbon controls on nitrous oxide production with changes in substrate availability in a north american grassland. *Soil Science* 173:332-341.
- Tjoelker, M.G., J. Oleksyn, and P.B. Reich. 2001. Modelling respiration of vegetation: evidence for a temperature-dependent  $Q_{10}$ . *Global Change Biology* 7:223-230.
- Townsend, A.R., and P.M. Vitousek. 1995. Soil organic matter dynamics along gradients in temperature and land use on the island of Hawaii. *Ecology* 76:721-733.
- Townsend, A.R., P.M. Vitousek, D.J. Desmarais, and A. Tharpe. 1997. Soil carbon pool structure and temperature sensitivity inferred using  $CO_2$  and  $^{13}CO_2$  incubation fluxes from five Hawaiian soils. *Biogeochemistry* 38:1-17.
- Trenberth, K.E., P.D. Jones, P. Ambenje, R. Bojariu, D. Easterling, A. Klein Tank, D. Parker, F. Rahimzadeh, J.A. Renwick, M. Rusticucci, B. Soden and P. Zhai. 2007. Observations: Surface and Atmospheric Climate Change, *In* S. Solomon, D. Qin, M. Manning, Z. Chen, M. Marquis, K.B. Averyt, M. Tignor and H.L. Miller, ed. *Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change*. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, United Kingdom and New York, NY, USA.
- Trumbore, S. 2000. Age of soil organic matter and soil respiration: radio carbon constraints on below ground C dynamics. *Ecological Applications* 10:399-411.
- Uchida, Y., T.J. Clough, F.M. Kelliher, and R.R. Sherlock. 2008. Effects of aggregate size, soil compaction, and bovine urine on  $N_2O$  emissions from a pasture soil. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 40:924-931.
- Uchida, Y., T.J. Clough, F.M. Kelliher, and R.R. Sherlock. 2010. Soil microbial respiration responses to changing temperature and substrate availability in fertile grassland. *Australian Journal of Soil Research* In press.
- van Cleemput, O., and L. Baert. 1984. Nitrite: a key compound in N loss processes under acid conditions? *Plant and Soil* 76:197-212.
- van Groenigen, J.W., P.J. Kuikman, W.J.M. de Groot, and G.L. Velthof. 2005. Nitrous oxide emission from urine-treated soil as influenced by urine composition and soil physical conditions. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 37:463-473.
- van Hees, P.A.W., C.D. Jones, R. Finlay, D.L. Godbold, and U.S. Lundström. 2005. The carbon we do not see—the impact of low molecular weight compounds on carbon dynamics and respiration in forest soils: a review. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 37:1-13.
- van't Hoff, J.H. 1884. *Études de dynamique chimique (Studies of chemical dynamics)* Frederik Muller and Co., Amsterdam, the Netherlands.

- Vanhala, P., K. Karhu, M. Tuomi, E. Sonninen, H. Jungner, H. Fritze, and J. Liski. 2007. Old soil carbon is more temperature sensitive than the young in an agricultural field. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 39:2967-2970.
- Veen, B.W. 1981. Relation between root respiration and root activity. *Plant and Soil* 63:73-76.
- Verhagen, F.J.M., H.J. Laanbroek, and J.W. Woldendorp. 1995. Competition for ammonium between plant roots and nitrifying and heterotrophic bacteria and the effects of protozoan grazing. *Plant and Soil* 170:241-250.
- Vines, H.M., and R.T. Wedding. 1960. Some effects of ammonia on plant metabolism and a possible mechanism for ammonia toxicity. *Plant Physiology* 35:820-825.
- Wachendorf, M., C. Lambe, F. Taube, and K. Dittert. 2008. Nitrous oxide emissions and dynamics of soil nitrogen under <sup>15</sup>N-labeled cow urine and dung patches on a sandy grassland soil. *Journal of Plant Nutrition and Soil Science* 171:171-180.
- Waldrop, M.P., and M.K. Firestone. 2004a. Microbial community utilization of recalcitrant and simple carbon compounds: impact of oak-woodland plant communities. *Oecologia* 138:275-284.
- Waldrop, M.P., and M.K. Firestone. 2004b. Altered utilization patterns of young and old soil C by microorganisms caused by temperature shifts and N additions. *Biogeochemistry* 67:235-248.
- Wan, S., and Y. Luo. 2003. Substrate regulation of soil respiration in a tallgrass prairie: Results of a clipping and shading experiment. *Global Biogeochemical Cycles* 17:1054.
- Wang, W., and J. Fang. 2009. Soil respiration and human effects on global grasslands. *Global and Planetary Change* 67:20-28.
- Wang, W.J., R.C. Dalal, P.W. Moody, and C.J. Smith. 2003. Relationships of soil respiration to microbial biomass, substrate availability and clay content. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 35:273-284.
- Wardle, D.A., R.D. Bardgett, J.N. Klironomos, H. Setälä, W.H. van der Putten, and D.H. Wall. 2004. Ecological linkages between aboveground and belowground biota. *Science* 304:1634-1637.
- Warembourg, F.R., and H.D. Esterlich. 2001. Plant phenology and soil fertility effects on below-ground carbon allocation for an annual (*Bromus madritensis*) and a perennial (*Bromus erectus*) grass species. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 33:1291-1303.
- Webster, F.A., and D.W. Hopkins. 1996. Contributions from different microbial processes to N<sub>2</sub>O emission from soil under different moisture regimes. *Biology and Fertility of Soils* 22:331-335.
- Weitz, A.M., E. Linder, S. Frolking, P.M. Crill, and M. Keller. 2001. N<sub>2</sub>O emissions from humid tropical agricultural soils: effects of soil moisture, texture and nitrogen availability. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 33:1077-1093.
- Weixin, C., D.C. Coleman, C.R. Carroll, and C.A. Hoffman. 1993. In situ measurement of root respiration and soluble C concentrations in the rhizosphere. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 25:1189-1196.
- Wezermal, C.T., and J.J. Gannon. 1967. Oxygen-nitrogen relationships in autotrophic nitrification. *Applied Microbiology* 15:1211-1215.
- White, J.G.H. 2000. The farmlands of New Zealand, p. 1-10, *In* J. D. H. White and J. Hodgson, eds. *New Zealand Pasture and Crop Science*. Oxford University Press, Oxford.
- White, R., S. Murray, and M. Rohweder. 2000. Pilot analysis of global ecosystems: grassland ecosystems technical report World Resources Institute, Washington DC.

- Williams, B.L., S.J. Grayston, and E.J. Reid. 2000. Influence of synthetic sheep urine on the microbial biomass, activity and community structure in two pastures in the Scottish uplands. *Plant and Soil* 225:175-185.
- Winkler, J.P., R.S. Cherry, and W.H. Schlesinger. 1996. The  $Q_{10}$  relationship of microbial respiration in a temperate forest soil. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 28:1067-1072.
- Wrage, N., G.L. Velthof, M.L. van Beusichem, and O. Oenema. 2001. Role of nitrifier denitrification in the production of nitrous oxide. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 33:1723-1732.
- Wrage, N., J.W.v. Groenigen, O. Oenema, and E.M. Baggs. 2005. A novel dual-isotope labelling method for distinguishing between soil sources of  $N_2O$ . *Rapid Communications in Mass Spectrometry* 19:3298-3306.
- Yamulki, S., S.C. Jarvis, and P. Owen. 1998. Nitrous oxide emissions from excreta applied in a simulated grazing pattern. *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 30:491-500.
- Yoshida, T., and M. Alexander. 1970. Nitrous oxide formation by *Nitrosomonas europaea* and heterotrophic microorganisms. *Soil Science Society of America Proceedings* 34:880-882.
- Zaman, M., H.J. Di, and K.C. Cameron. 1999. A field study of gross rates of N mineralization and nitrification and their relationships to microbial biomass and enzyme activities in soils treated with dairy effluent and ammonium fertilizer. *Soil Use and Management* 15:188-194.
- Zobitz, J., D. Moore, W. Sacks, R. Monson, D. Bowling, and D. Schimel. 2008. Integration of Process-based Soil Respiration Models with Whole-Ecosystem  $CO_2$  Measurements. *Ecosystems* 11:250-269.
- Šimek, M., L. Jíšová, and D.W. Hopkins. 2002. What is the so-called optimum pH for denitrification in soil? *Soil Biology & Biochemistry* 34:1227-1234.